

## Chapter 01: An Introduction to Forensic Psychology

### Chapter 01 Multiple Choice Questions

1. Alfred Binet conducted a series of studies to examine how question types influenced the accuracy of child eyewitnesses. He found that:

moderately leading questions result in the most accurate answers  
free recall results in the most accurate answers  
highly leading questions result in the most accurate answers  
free recall results in the least accurate answers  
eyewitness accuracy did not vary across question type

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 01-1-01

**Page-Reference:** 4

**Answer:** free recall results in the most accurate answers

2. A professor arranges for a confederate to enter his classroom, steal her wallet, and run out. The researcher then asks her students to provide a description of the "offender" in an effort to study eyewitness recall. This is an example of:

a verifiable experiment  
a virtual experiment  
a reality experiment  
a misinformation test  
a subjective recall test

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 01-1-02

**Page-Reference:** 4

**Answer:** a reality experiment

3. Stern's 1901 experiment involved a bogus quarrel between two students in which a gun was involved. Stern concluded that:

racial discrimination is common  
pre-trial media has a strong influence on eyewitness accuracy  
retroactive memory-falsification tends to occur  
emotional arousal influences accuracy of recall  
this test allowed him to classify students into good and poor witnesses

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 01-1-03

**Page-Reference:** 4

**Answer:** emotional arousal influences accuracy of recall

4. Place the following events in chronological order:
- 1 – Cattell conducts some of the first experiments in North America on the psychology of testimony.
  - 2 – APA recognizes forensic psychology as a specialty discipline.
  - 3 – Hugo Munsterberg publishes *On the Witness Stand*.
  - 4 – The U.S. Supreme court lays out the Daubert criteria for determining when scientific evidence should be admitted in court.

4, 2, 3, 1

3, 4, 2, 1

4, 3, 2, 1

1, 2, 3, 4

1, 3, 4, 2

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 01-1-04

**Page-Reference:** 4-5, 12, 21

**Answer:** 1, 3, 4, 2

5. Which psychologist conducted some of the first experiments in the U.S. on eyewitness testimony?

- Wundt
- Cattell
- Binet
- Stern
- von Schrenck-Notzing

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 01-1-05

**Page-Reference:** 4

**Answer:** Cattell

6. In Binet's studies on suggestibility and testimony in children, what type of technique produced the most accurate recall?

- prompted recall
- mildly leading
- free recall
- highly misleading
- recognition

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 01-1-06

**Page-Reference:** 4

**Answer:** free recall

7. According to von Schrenck-Notzing, extensive pretrial press coverage could influence the testimony of people by causing what he called:

- post-event misinformation
- memory contamination
- source monitoring errors
- exposure distortion
- retroactive memory falsification

**Difficulty:** Easy  
**QuestionID:** 01-1-07  
**Page-Reference:** 5

**Answer:** retroactive memory falsification

8. In 1906, Hugo Munsterberg worked on the criminal case of a young disabled man (Richard Ivens) from Chicago. As part of this work, Munsterberg examined:

eyewitness testimony accuracy  
criminal responsibility  
mental health records  
interrogation records  
juror selection methods

**Difficulty:** Moderate  
**QuestionID:** 01-1-08  
**Page-Reference:** 5

**Answer:** interrogation records

9. Which of the following psychologists would be most interested in the expert testimony provided by von Schrenck-Notzing in 1896?

a psychologist interested in the diagnosis of juvenile delinquents  
a psychologist interested in the effect of pre-trial press coverage  
a psychologist interested in the problems with hypnotic interviewing  
a psychologist interested in the accuracy of child eyewitnesses  
a psychologist interested in lie detection

**Difficulty:** Moderate  
**QuestionID:** 01-1-09  
**Page-Reference:** 5

**Answer:** a psychologist interested in the effect of pre-trial press coverage

10. Which of the following individuals would be most surprised to hear about research showing that child eyewitnesses can be highly inaccurate?

Varendonck  
Bandura  
Marston  
Von Schrenck-Notzing  
Ceci

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 01-1-10

**Page-Reference:** 5

**Answer:** Varendonck

11. Which of the following psychologists would be most interested in the expert testimony provided by Varendonck in 1911?

a psychologist interested in the diagnosis of juvenile delinquents  
a psychologist interested in the effect of pre-trial press coverage  
a psychologist interested in the problems with hypnotic interviewing  
a psychologist interested in the accuracy of child eyewitnesses  
a psychologist interested in factors that influence jury decision making

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 01-1-11

**Page-Reference:** 5

**Answer:** a psychologist interested in the accuracy of child eyewitnesses

12. Who is considered the father of forensic psychology?

John Henry Wigmore  
Wilhelm Wundt  
James Ogloff  
James Cattell  
Hugo Munsterberg

**Difficulty:** Easy  
**QuestionID:** 01-1-12  
**Page-Reference:** 6

**Answer:** Hugo Munsterberg

13. Which of the following is the correct pairing of psychologist to their research?

Munsterberg – On the Witness Stand  
Varendonck – La Suggestibilite  
Von Schrenck-Notzing – "Measurements of Accuracy of Recollection"  
Cattell – retroactive memory falsification  
Wigmore – Kriminal Psychologie

**Difficulty:** Moderate  
**QuestionID:** 01-1-13  
**Page-Reference:** 6

**Answer:** Munsterberg – *On the Witness Stand*

14. Which law professor provided a critical response to Hugo Munsterberg's claims that psychology had much offer to the legal system?

William Wundt  
James McKeen Cattell  
William James  
John Henry Wigmore  
Franz von Liszt

**Difficulty:** Moderate  
**QuestionID:** 01-1-14  
**Page-Reference:** 6

**Answer:** John Henry Wigmore

15. According to Sheldon's (1949) constitutional theory, which of the following types of individuals are most likely to become involved with crime?

ectomorphs  
mesomorphs  
those with lesions in the temporal lobe  
those having experienced maternal deprivation  
men with two Y chromosomes

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 01-1-15

**Page-Reference:** 7

**Answer:** mesomorphs

16. According to Sutherland's (1939) differential association theory, crime is the result of:

poverty  
labelling  
learning  
socio-economic strain  
high levels of extraversion and neuroticism

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 01-1-16

**Page-Reference:** 7

**Answer:** learning

17. Which of the following theorists is associated most closely with labelling theories of crime?

Merton  
Becker  
Sutherland  
Bowlby  
Bandura

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 01-1-17

**Page-Reference:** 7

**Answer:** Becker

18. According to Eysenck, which of the following would be at risk for criminal behaviour?

- someone with good conditionability
- someone with low levels of extraversion and neuroticism
- someone with high levels of extraversion and neuroticism
- someone who is easy to socialize
- someone with low self-control

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 01-1-18

**Page-Reference:** 7-8

**Answer:** someone with high levels of extraversion and neuroticism

19. Which of the following is the correct pairing of psychologist(s) to theory?

- Sheldon – strain theory
- Eysenck – chromosomal theory
- Akers – social learning theory
- Gottfredson and Hirschi – biosocial theory
- Sutherland – dyscontrol theory

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 01-1-19

**Page-Reference:** 7-8

**Answer:** Akers – social learning theory

20. What was the first case that a psychologist served as an expert witness in the United States?

State v. Driver  
People v. Hawthorne  
Brown v. Board of Education  
R. v. Hubbert  
Daubert v. Merrell Dow Pharmaceuticals

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 01-1-20

**Page-Reference:** 8

**Answer:** *State v. Driver*

21. The issue in the case of Jenkins v. United States (1962) that is of most interest to forensic psychologists is:

the right for a defendant to plead not guilty by reason of insanity  
the duty to inform a third party of potential risks  
the duty to report suspected cases of child abuse  
the admissibility of expert testimony from psychologists on mental disorders  
the use of psychology in civil trials

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 01-1-21

**Page-Reference:** 8

**Answer:** the admissibility of expert testimony from psychologists on mental disorders

22. What area of have Canadian forensic psychologists made the most significant contributions?

Eyewitness testimony  
Jury decision making  
Deception detection  
Risk assessment and treatment  
Police selection and training

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 01-1-22

**Page-Reference:** 10

**Answer:** Risk assessment and treatment

23. The first federal correctional psychologist was hired in what province or territory?

- British Columbia
- Ontario
- Quebec
- Northwest Territories
- Alberta

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 01-1-23

**Page-Reference:** 9

**Answer:** Quebec

24. In what legal case did the Supreme Court of Canada first define the criteria for determining when the testimony of expert witnesses, including psychologists, would be admitted in court?

- R. v. Daubert
- R. v. Mohan
- R. v. Gladue
- R. v. Oickle
- R. v. Hubbert

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 01-1-24

**Page-Reference:** 9, 24

**Answer:** *R. v. Mohan*

25. Which of the following points demonstrates that forensic psychology has established itself as a legitimate discipline?

The development of professional associations that represent the interests of forensic psychologists.

A consensus on the definition of forensic psychology.

The fact that forensic psychologists now regularly take on the role of legal scholar.

The fact that criteria for admitting expert testimony from forensic psychologists have become more lenient.

Widespread prescription privileges for forensic psychologists.

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 01-1-25

**Page-Reference:** 10-12

**Answer:** The development of professional associations that represent the interests of forensic psychologists.

26. According to the narrow definition of forensic psychology, which of the following specialists would not be considered a forensic psychologist?

A psychologist who provides risk assessments to the parole board.

A psychologist who studies how psychopathy influences patterns of offending.

A psychologist who treats victims and perpetrators of intimate partner violence.

A psychologist who consults with lawyers concerning whether their clients are fit to stand trial.

A psychologist who provides court-mandated treatment to offenders.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 01-1-26

**Page-Reference:** 12-13

**Answer:** A psychologist who studies how psychopathy influences patterns of offending.

27. Which of the following is not a likely activity of a clinical forensic psychologist?

Studying the effects of lighting conditions on eyewitness recall.

Evaluating the parents of a troubled teen for custody and access recommendations.

Delivering treatment programs to high risk sex offenders.

Assessing juvenile delinquents in detention centres for behavioural problems.

Practising relaxation techniques with police officers on leave due to burnout.

**Difficulty:** Easy  
**QuestionID:** 01-1-27  
**Page-Reference:** 13-14

**Answer:** Studying the effects of lighting conditions on eyewitness recall.

28. What is the main difference between a clinical forensic psychologist and a forensic psychiatrist?

Forensic psychiatrists cannot provide expert testimony in court.  
Clinical forensic psychologists can prescribe medication.  
Forensic psychiatrists aren't concerned with mental health issues.  
Clinical forensic psychologists rely more on a medical model of mental illness.  
Forensic psychiatrists are medical doctors.

**Difficulty:** Easy  
**QuestionID:** 01-1-28  
**Page-Reference:** 13-14

**Answer:** Forensic psychiatrists are medical doctors.

29. Which task is likely to be performed by an experimental forensic psychologist?

Examining the effects of judges' instructions on jury verdicts.  
Providing expert testimony.  
Examining the effects of correctional programs on reoffending rates.  
Studying the effects of police stress on job satisfaction.  
All of the above.

**Difficulty:** Easy  
**QuestionID:** 01-1-29  
**Page-Reference:** 14-15

**Answer:** All of the above.

30. Which forensic discipline is concerned with examining the remains of dead bodies in an attempt to determine the time and cause of death through an autopsy?

Forensic anthropology  
Forensic odontology  
Forensic entomology  
Forensic pathology  
Forensic podiatry

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 01-1-30

**Page-Reference:** 14

**Answer:** Forensic pathology

31. Dr. Fahmy works with the police to determine time of death by examining insect activity surrounding a dead body. Which of the following disciplines does Dr. Fahmy work in?

Forensic anthropology  
Forensic odontology  
Forensic entomology  
Forensic pathology  
Forensic podiatry

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 01-1-31

**Page-Reference:** 14

**Answer:** Forensic entomology

32. Which of the following is an example of "psychology in the law"?

A psychologist providing expert testimony in court on the accuracy of eyewitness identification.  
Examining how we can improve the assessment of fitness to stand trial.  
Validating a tool for predicting risk of violence.  
A researcher examining factors that affect police decision making in a lab setting.  
Studying the impact of a new interrogation technique to see if it decreases the likelihood that people will make false confessions.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 01-1-32

**Page-Reference:** 16

**Answer:** A psychologist providing expert testimony in court on the accuracy of eyewitness identification.

33. Judges use findings from psychological research to decide whether a witness on the stand is lying or not. This is a good example of:

- psychology and the law
- psychology in the law
- informational influence
- normalization
- psychology of the law

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 01-1-33

**Page-Reference:** 16

**Answer:** psychology in the law

34. Which of the following is an example of research classified as "psychology and the law"?

- providing expert testimony on child witnesses
- studying the accuracy of eyewitnesses
- police using proper interviewing techniques
- studying how judicial discretion influences future criminal behaviour
- examining how court rulings influence forensic psychologists

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 01-1-34

**Page-Reference:** 16

**Answer:** studying the accuracy of eyewitnesses

35. Which of the following is an example of research classified as "psychology of the law"?

Research on the relationship between police stress and use of force decision-making.  
A study on how different judges decide on sentences.  
Studying the effect of the law on the amount of crime in our society.  
A longitudinal study of a sex offender treatment program.  
An investigation into how well clinicians can predict future offending.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 01-1-35

**Page-Reference:** 17

**Answer:** Studying the effect of the law on the amount of crime in our society.

36. Which legal ruling requires the police to ensure that youth interrogation rights are explained in a language that is appropriate to a youth's age and understanding?

R. v. L.T.H.  
R. v. Mohan  
R. v. Gladue  
R. v. Oickle  
R. v. Swain

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 01-1-36

**Page-Reference:** 17

**Answer:** *R. v. L.T.H.*

37. In what legal case did the Supreme Court of Canada set the guidelines for when, and how, expert testimony should be used in cases involving battered woman syndrome?

R. v. Lavallee  
R. v. Mohan  
R. v. Gladue  
R. v. Oickle  
R. v. Hubbert

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 01-1-37

**Page-Reference:** 17

**Answer:** *R. v. Lavallee*

38. In what legal case did the Supreme Court of Canada rule that police interrogation techniques using some psychological coercion were an acceptable way to extract confessions?

R. v. Swain  
R. v. L.T.H.  
R. v. Gladue  
R. v. Oickle  
R. v. Hubbert

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 01-1-38

**Page-Reference:** 17

**Answer:** *R. v. Oickle*

39. In what legal case did the Supreme Court of Canada formally acknowledge that jurors can be biased by different sources of information?

R. v. Swain  
R. v. L.T.H.  
R. v. Williams  
R. v. Oickle  
R. v. Hubbert

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 01-1-39

**Page-Reference:** 17

**Answer:** *R. v. Williams*

40. What is the main difference between an expert witness and other witnesses in court?

Expert witnesses are not cross-examined.  
Expert witnesses can only testify about what they directly observed.  
Expert witnesses are able to offer their opinion to the court.  
Expert witnesses are only available for the prosecution.  
Expert witnesses do not have to meet any criteria before they are allowed to testify.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 01-1-40

**Page-Reference:** 18

**Answer:** Expert witnesses are able to offer their opinion to the court.

41. What would be considered the most ethical behaviour for a psychologist who is hired as an expert witness?

Provide testimony consistent with the party that hired you.  
Ensure that both the defence and the prosecution have an expert witness.  
Provide testimony relevant to the case as you understand it.  
Discuss your testimony with both the defence team and the prosecution team.  
Provide only a written report rather than testify in person.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 01-1-41

**Page-Reference:** 18

**Answer:** Provide testimony relevant to the case as you understand it.

42. Hess (2006) describes seven ways that law and psychology differ. Which of the following statements is false?

Psychology is nomothetic and law is idiographic.  
Psychology is prescriptive and law is descriptive.  
Psychological knowledge is gained through research and legal knowledge is gained through precedent.  
A psychologist's behaviour is severely limited within the court while the behaviour of a lawyer is less restricted.  
Psychology believes in the quest for objective truths whereas the law defines truth subjectively.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 01-1-42

**Page-Reference:** 19

**Answer:** Psychology is prescriptive and law is descriptive.

43. According to Hess (2006), which of the following accurately represents one way that law and psychology can be contrasted?

Law is idiographic while psychology is nomothetic.  
Law is descriptive while psychology is prescriptive.  
Law is proactive while psychology is reactive.  
Law is academic while psychology is operational.  
Law defines truth objectively while psychology defines truth subjectively.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 01-1-43

**Page-Reference:** 19

**Answer:** Law is idiographic while psychology is nomothetic.

44. Which of the following was not identified by Hess (2006) as a way that law and psychology is different?

latitude  
principles  
criteria  
purpose  
epistemology

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 01-1-44

**Page-Reference:** 19

**Answer:** purpose

45. The "general acceptance test" relates to:

eyewitness recall  
child witnesses  
aggression and segregation in schools  
suggestive questioning techniques  
the admissibility of expert testimony

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 01-1-45

**Page-Reference:** 20-21

**Answer:** the admissibility of expert testimony

46. Which of the following is not specified by the Daubert criteria?

The research adheres to professional standards.  
The research is falsifiable.  
The research has been peer reviewed.  
The research has a recognized rate of error.  
The research has been conducted in real-world (i.e., non-lab) settings.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 01-1-46

**Page-Reference:** 21

**Answer:** The research has been conducted in real-world (i.e., non-lab) settings.

47. Why is the case of R. v. Mohan (1994) important for forensic psychologists?

It stressed the duty to protect a third party.  
It dealt with the admissibility of expert evidence.  
It established guidelines for reporting child abuse.  
It highlighted the importance of client confidentiality.  
It dealt with the issue of racial segregation.

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 01-1-47

**Page-Reference:** 21-22

**Answer:** It dealt with the admissibility of expert evidence.

48. According to R. v. Mohan (1994), which criteria is not a consideration by judges when determining the admissibility of expert testimony?

The expert must be qualified.

The testimony must provide information that goes beyond the jurors' common understanding.

The evidence provided must be necessary for assisting the trier of fact.

The testimony must have been allowed into evidence by a higher court.

The evidence must not violate any rules of exclusion.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 01-1-48

**Page-Reference:** 21-22

**Answer:** The testimony must have been allowed into evidence by a higher court.

49. What is the significance of the case of White Burgess Langille Inman v. Abbott and Haliburton Co.?

It dealt with junk science in the court room.

It ruled that expert witnesses should be independent and impartial.

It dealt with issues associated with the insanity defence.

It highlighted the importance of voluntary (i.e., non-coercive) confessions.

It established guidelines for cross-examination.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 01-1-49

**Page-Reference:** 22

**Answer:** It ruled that expert witnesses should be independent and impartial.

## Chapter 01 Short Answer Questions

1. What are the three major categories of crime theories discussed in your text? List the three categories and describe a specific theory that fits into each category.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 01-2-01

**Page-Reference:** 7-8

**Answer:** a. Biological theories

- E.g., Sheldon's constitutional theory suggests that body build and temperament are linked; mesomorphs, due to their aggressive nature and muscular build, are more likely to become involved in crime.

b. Sociological theories

- E.g., Merton's strain theory suggests that certain people (e.g., those from the lower class) have restricted access to legitimate means (e.g., education) to achieve valued goals of success (e.g., high paying jobs); some of these individuals will turn to illegitimate means (e.g., crime) in an attempt to achieve these goals.

c. Psychological theories

- E.g., Bowlby's theory of maternal deprivation suggests that early separation of children from their mothers prevents effective social development from taking place; without effective social development, children will experience problems developing positive social relationships and will instead develop antisocial inclinations.

2. Provide a broad definition of forensic psychology.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 01-2-02

**Page-Reference:** 12-13

**Answer:** According to Bartol and Bartol (2006), forensic psychology is defined as (a) the research endeavour that examines aspects of human behaviour directly related to the legal process and (b) the professional practice of psychology within or in consultation with a legal system that embraces both civil and criminal law.

3. Name the three different types of roles that forensic psychologists can play. Describe the sorts of activities that each type would be involved in (use examples).

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 01-2-03

**Page-Reference:** 13-15

**Answer:** a. Clinician

- As a clinician, the forensic psychologist is interested in mental health issues as they pertain to the legal system. Activities can include research (e.g., validating an assessment tool) and practice (e.g., making risk assessment decisions).

b. Researcher

- As a researcher, the forensic psychologist is concerned with mental health issues as they pertain to the legal system, but also any other research issues that relate to the law or legal system. Examples of potential activities include examining the effectiveness of risk assessment strategies, determining factors that influence jury decision making, studying the impact of questioning style on eyewitness recall, etc.

c. Legal scholar

- As a legal scholar, the forensic psychologist is interested in the analysis of mental health law and psychologically oriented legal movements. Most of the activities of the legal scholar revolve around policy analysis (e.g., taser use in police agencies) and legislative consultation (e.g., mandatory arrest legislation in domestic violence cases).

4. According to Haney (1980), there are three primary ways in which psychology and law relate to one another. List, define, and provide an example of each.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 01-2-04

**Page-Reference:** 16-17

**Answer:** a. Psychology and the law

- Psychology is viewed as a separate discipline to the law and is used to test various assumptions made by the law or legal system.

- E.g., determining whether risk of violence can be accurately predicted using a specific assessment tool

b. Psychology in the law

- Psychological knowledge is applied directly within the context of the legal system as it operates.

- E.g., the provision of expert testimony about factors that influence the accuracy of eyewitness identifications in a court case

c. Psychology of the law

- Psychology is used to study the law itself

- E.g., a legal scholar examining whether certain laws have helped to reduce the crime rate

5. According to Cutler and Kovera (2011), what are the two main functions of expert witnesses? How do expert witnesses differ from ordinary witnesses in court?

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 01-2-05

**Page-Reference:** 18

**Answer:** - The two main functions of expert witnesses are to provide the court with information that assists them in understanding the issues at hand and to provide the court with an opinion (which must fall within the limits of their areas of expertise).

- Expert witnesses differ from ordinary witnesses in that they are able to provide their opinion on a particular matter, whereas ordinary witnesses are only able to testify about what they have directly observed.

6. Hess (2006) discusses at least seven different ways that psychology and law differ. List and define four of these differences (i.e., dimensions). Make sure you mention how psychology and law are different on each dimension.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 01-2-06

**Page-Reference:** 19

**Answer:** a. Knowledge

- In psychology, knowledge is gained through cumulative research.

- In the law, knowledge is acquired through precedent, logical thinking, and case law.

b. Methodology

- In psychology, methods are predominantly nomothetic (i.e., goal is to uncover general trends and processes).

- In the law, the methodological approach is idiographic (i.e., operates on a case-by-case basis).

c. Nature of law

- Psychology is descriptive, the goal being to describe how people behave.

- Law is prescriptive, telling people how they should behave.

d. Epistemology

- In psychology, it is assumed that there is an objective truth that can potentially be uncovered using the experimental method.

- In the law, truth is defined subjectively and is based on who can present the most convincing argument.

e. Principles

- In psychology, alternative explanations are considered (i.e., falsifiability).

- The lawyer's goal is to convince the court that his/her explanation is solely correct.

f. Criteria

- Psychology is cautious and conservative in accepting a hypothesis as true (results must be replicated, etc.).

- Law decides truth on the basis of a single case and a criterion that is far more lenient.

g. Latitude

- The behaviour of a psychologist providing expert testimony in court is severely restricted.

- The behaviour of a lawyer within the court is subject to far fewer restrictions.

*Note. The student need only provide four of the seven dimensions to receive full marks.*

7. What is the "general acceptance test"? What is the main criticism associated with this test?

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 01-2-07

**Page-Reference:** 20-21

**Answer:** - The general acceptance test is a standard for accepting expert testimony. It states that expert testimony will be admissible in court if the basis of the testimony is generally accepted within the scientific community in which it belongs.

- This test formed the basis for admissibility decisions for many years in the United States; however, the major criticism associated with it comes from the vagueness of terms such as "general acceptance" and "the particular field in which it belongs" and whether judges are able to appropriately determine the scope of these terms.

8. What are the four specific Daubert criteria defined by the U.S. Supreme Court that determine when scientific evidence is considered reliable?

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 01-2-08

**Page-Reference:** 21

**Answer:** 1) The research has been peer reviewed.  
2) The research is testable (i.e., falsifiable through experimentation).  
3) The research has a recognized rate of error.  
4) The research adheres to professional standards.

9. What are the Mohan criteria? List and define the four criteria, and identify a potential problem that applies to all of them.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 01-2-09

**Page-Reference:** 21-22

**Answer:** a. The *Mohan* criteria are the Canadian criteria which outline factors that should be considered when determining the admissibility of expert testimony in court. The four criteria are:

- The evidence must be relevant.
- The evidence must be necessary for assisting the trier of fact (i.e., it goes beyond the common understanding of court).
- The evidence must not violate any rules of exclusion (i.e., it must not relate to whether a witness is telling the truth).
- The testimony must be provided by a qualified expert.

b. These criteria are potentially problematic as they are highly subject to the discretion of the judge and judges can sometimes be wrong (e.g., the judge determines if the evidence actually goes beyond the common understanding of the jury).

**Chapter 02: Police  
Psychology**

**Chapter 02 Multiple Choice  
Questions**

1. \_\_\_\_\_ refers to a set of procedures used by the police to either screen out undesirable candidates or select in desirable candidates.

RPAT  
Police selection  
GAT-B  
KSA Checklist Inventory  
Screen-In/Screen-Out Doctrine

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:**  
02-1-0  
1

**Page-  
Reference:** 28

**Answer:** Police  
selection

2. Which of the following selection procedures are used least often?

background checks  
cognitive ability tests  
medical exams  
selection interviews  
personality tests

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 02-1-0  
2

**Page-  
Reference:** 29

**Answer:** cognitive ability  
tests

3. **Lewis Terman's attempt to assist with police selection in the early 1900s involved the assessment of:**

intelligence  
physical abilities  
personality traits  
criminal background  
authoritarianism

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 02-1-0  
3

**Page-  
Reference:** 29

**Answer:**  
intelligence

4. **Which of the following police selection procedures is used most often?**

background checks  
recommendation letters  
cognitive ability tests  
polygraph tests  
physical abilities tests

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 02-1-04

**Page-Reference:** 29

**Answer:** background checks

5. **Marcus has applied to become an RCMP officer. What are the two primary aptitude battery assessments that he must pass in order to progress in the selection process?**

Polygraph exam and the police aptitude test.  
The six factor personality questionnaire and the physical abilities requirement evaluation.  
The physical abilities requirement evaluation and a field investigation.  
The police aptitude test and the six factor personality questionnaire.  
Cadet training and the police aptitude test.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 02-1-05

**Page-Reference:** 29, 30

**Answer:** The police aptitude test and the six factor personality questionnaire.

6. **According to Cochrane, Tett, and Vandecreek (2003), which of the following police selection procedures is most commonly used in the United States?**

physical agility tests  
drug testing  
selection interview  
background checks  
polygraph tests

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 02-1-06

**Page-Reference:** 29

**Answer:** background

7. Julia has applied to become a police officer with the Hamilton Police Service. Which of the following selection procedures will NOT be used throughout her application process?

- physical ability testing
- personality testing
- selection interview
- background check
- polygraph test

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 02-1-07

**Page-Reference:** 29

**Answer:** polygraph test

8. The RCMP's \_\_\_\_\_ assesses physical fitness before anyone can become an officer.

- RPAT
- POPAT
- A-PREP
- PREP
- PARE

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 02-1-08

**Page-Reference:** 30

**Answer:** PARE

9. Which of the following individuals would be best suited to become a police officer based on the essential KSAs identified in your text?

Sarah: has a public relations background, volunteered at a children's fitness program, has received leadership awards, got top grades in her degree program, and is considered responsible and trustworthy.

Lyle: has a high degree of physical fitness, considered funny and personable, is not bothered by what other people think of him, and is highly independent and motivated.

Tarek: has worked extensively with youth populations, very shy and considerate, works well in small groups, always willing to help others, tries to minimize stressful situations.

Juanita: has lived all over the world and speaks several languages, outperformed her classmates on the PARE, wants to prove that women can be police officers, and is dominant and strong-willed.

Ashton: scored in the acceptable ranges on all physical and psychological testing, background check was clean, critical of self and others, and endorses rigid legal attitudes and practices.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:**  
02-1-0  
9

**Page-  
Reference:** 31

**Answer:** Sarah: has a public relations background, volunteered at a children's fitness program, has received leadership awards, got top grades in her degree program, and is considered responsible and trustworthy.

**10 In the context of police selection, what is meant by KSA?**

A physical ability test taken by all potential officers.  
Sets of characteristics that define a "good" police officer.

A police selection agency.  
Characteristics that are undesirable in a potential police officer.

An instrument that is used to assess psychopathology.

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:**  
02-1-1  
0

**Page-  
Reference:** 31, 33

**Answer:** Sets of characteristics that define a "good" police officer.

11 In the context of police selection, the term *validation* refers to:

- The development of a selection instrument to measure the abilities of potential police officers.
- The need to ensure that certified individuals are administering police selection tests to applicants.
- The need to ensure that the results of a police selection instrument are related to some measure of police performance.
- A job analysis.
- The development of a selection instrument to measure the knowledge of potential police officers.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 02-1-1  
1

**Page-Reference:** 31-32

**Answer:** The need to ensure that the results of a police selection instrument are related to some measure of police performance.

12 Which psychometric property is most important in the context of police selection?

- concurrent validity
- divergent validity
- predictive validity
- intrinsic reliability
- long-term reliability

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 02-1-1  
2

**Page-Reference:** 31

**Answer:** predictive validity

13 The validity coefficient calculated for a selection instrument (when it is used to predict job

As performance on the selection instrument increases, so do ratings of job performance.  
As performance on the selection instrument increases, ratings of job performance decrease.  
The selection instrument has low concurrent validity.  
The selection instrument has low predictive validity.  
There is no relationship between the selection instrument and job performance ratings.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 02-1-1  
3

**Page-  
Reference:** 32

**Answer:** There is no relationship between the selection instrument and job performance ratings.

- 14 **When conducting job analysis concerning police selection, an organizational psychologist may find this challenging because:**

Different jobs within policing are related to different KSAs.  
The KSAs of a good police officer may not be stable over time.  
Individuals disagree over which KSAs are important to assess.  
There are a range of techniques for identifying relevant KSAs.  
All of the above

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 02-1-14

**Page-  
Reference:** 32-33

**Answer:** All of the above

- 15 **Which of the following is considered to be a serious problem with validation research in the area of police selection?**

There is disagreement on how to best measure the performance of police officers.  
There is no validity coefficient available for measuring predictive validity.  
Indicators of on-the-job performance do not exist in the policing field.  
Cognitive ability tests are characterised by relatively high validity coefficients.  
Few police applicants have to go through the selection process.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 02-1-1  
5

**Page-  
Reference:** 33

**Answer:** There is disagreement on how to best measure the performance of police officers.

16 **Which of the following has been identified as a key problem with the police selection interview?**

The interview lacks any structure.  
The interview is too lengthy to be used by many police agencies.  
The interview contains an excessive amount of questions.  
There is little research examining the predictive validity of the interview.  
There is little research examining the divergent validity of the interview.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 02-1-16

**Page-  
Reference:** 33-34

**Answer:** There is little research examining the predictive validity of the interview.

17 **Research, both within policing and from the general field of organizational psychology, suggests that interviewing to select police officers should be \_\_\_\_\_.**

used with caution  
never used  
the primary method  
replaced with an interrogation  
supplemented with a second interview

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 02-1-17

**Page-Reference:** 34

**Answer:** used with caution

18 You are applying to be a police officer with the RCMP. Which of the following tests would you expect to be administered in order to measure your cognitive abilities?

IPI  
Situational test  
RPAT  
KSA  
MMPI

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 02-1-18

**Page-Reference:** 34

**Answer:** RPAT

19 Cognitive ability tests used during police selection tend to be better at predicting \_\_\_\_\_ relative to \_\_\_\_\_.

judgment and problem-solving, situational testing  
police suitability, personality testing  
personality score results, successful on-the-job performance  
academy performance, on-the-job performance  
poor on-the-job performance, successful on-the-job performance

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 02-1-19

**Page-Reference:** 35

**Answer:** academy performance, on-the-job performance

20 Which of the following is the most commonly used personality test for police selection?

Situational test  
RPAT  
DSM  
Knowledge test  
MMPI

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 02-1-20

**Page-Reference:** 35

**Answer:** MMPI

21 As a psychologist involved in police selection, which measure(s) would you be most confident in administering to an applicant if your goal was to accurately predict the potential for a candidate to display problematic police behaviour?

IPI  
SILS  
MMPI  
MMPI-2 Lie Scale  
RPAT

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:**  
02-1-2  
1

**Page-  
Reference:** 35-36

**Answer:** MMPI-2 Lie  
Scale

22 **A common personality test used in police selection is the IPI. What does IPI stand for?**

Inbau's Personality Index  
Inwald Personality Inventory  
Inwald's Policing Index  
Iterative Policing Inventory  
Iterative Personality Index

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:**  
02-1-2  
2

**Page-  
Reference:** 36

**Answer:** Inwald Personality  
Inventory

23 **As a psychologist involved in police selection, which measure(s) would you be most confident in administering to an applicant if your goal was to accurately predict their future job performance?**

IPI  
SILS  
MMPI  
MMPI-2  
RPAT

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:**  
02-1-2  
3

**Page-  
Reference:** 36

**Answer:**  
IPI

24 **What is the most common police selection instrument used in assessment centres?**

personality tests  
cognitive ability tests  
situational tests  
selection interviews  
polygraph tests

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:**  
02-1-2  
4

**Page-  
Reference:** 36

**Answer:** situational  
tests

25 **An RCMP applicant is given a certain period of time to interview witnesses in a mock domestic disturbance case and complete an incident report. This scenario is most likely a component of:**

an IPI  
a situational test  
a selection interview  
an RPAT  
a personality test

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 02-1-25

**Page-Reference:** 36-37

**Answer:** a situational test

26 **As a police selection instrument, research suggests that situational tests have:**

no predictive validity.  
extremely high predictive validity.  
moderate predictive validity.  
no research has been conducted on the predictive validity of situational tests.  
results of studies that have been conducted are inconclusive.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 02-1-26

**Page-Reference:** 36

**Answer:** moderate predictive validity.

27 **According to Sheehan and Cordner (1989), which of the following are arguments for the use of police discretion?**

Law enforcement resources are limited and full enforcement of the law would overwhelm the criminal justice system.

Most law violations are minor and do not require strict enforcement all the time.

Some laws are vague and ill-defined, which makes discretion necessary.

Full enforcement of the law would alienate the public.

All of the above.

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 02-1-2  
7

**Page-Reference:** 39

**Answer:** All of the above.

- 28 Jerome is an African Canadian male living in downtown Sudbury. He gets pulled over by the police in a traffic stop even though he has not violated the law and was doing the speed limit. Jerome's experience reflects the presence of \_\_\_\_\_ in policing.

discretion  
racial profiling  
simulation exercises  
selection procedures  
ticketing quotas

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 02-1-28

**Page-Reference:** 39

**Answer:** racial profiling

- 29 What is considered to be the primary reason why the likelihood of encounters between the police and mentally ill individuals has increased?

Mentally ill persons commit more crimes than those not suffering from mental illness.  
Most criminal behaviour is associated with mental illness of some kind.  
The recent movement towards deinstitutionalization of mentally ill individuals.  
Victimization rates of persons with mental illness have increased.  
Mentally ill persons are more violent than those not suffering from mental illness.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 02-1-29

**Page-Reference:** 41

**Answer:** The recent movement towards deinstitutionalization of mentally ill individuals.

- 30 **Hoch, Hartford, Heslop, and Stitt (2009) conducted a study to determine whether mentally ill individuals in London, Ontario, were more likely than non-mentally ill individuals to come into contact with the police and be arrested and/or charged. They found that:**

mentally ill individuals had significantly less contact with the police.  
mentally ill individuals had significantly more contact with the police.  
mentally ill individuals were less likely to be charged by the police.  
mentally ill individuals were less likely to get arrested by the police.  
mentally ill individuals were more likely to commit crimes with an accomplice.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 02-1-30

**Page-Reference:** 42

**Answer:** mentally ill individuals had significantly more contact with the police.

- 31 **In Canada, the authority to use force is laid out in the \_\_\_\_\_.**

use of force model  
Criminal Code  
Legislative Act of 1964  
case of *R. v. Benoit*  
case of *R. v. Dziekanski*

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:**  
02-1-3  
1

**Page-  
Reference:** 44

**Answer:** Criminal  
Code

32 **According to Hall and Votova (2013), approximately what percentage of police-citizen interactions involved use-of-force?**

less than 1%  
10%  
25%  
50%  
75%

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:**  
02-1-3  
2

**Page-  
Reference:** 44-45

**Answer:** less than  
1%

33 **As discussed in the textbook, what was the main issue in the case of Sammy Yatim?**

The rights of mentally disordered offenders.  
Police use of force.  
Police discretion in situations involving the public.  
The use of inappropriate police discretion in cases involving youths.  
The negative effects of police stress.

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 02-1-3  
3

**Page-Reference:** 44-45

**Answer:** Police use of force.

34 **Which of the following statements is true regarding police use-of-force data from Hall and Votova (2013)?**

Suspects in use-of-force encounters are usually female.  
Suspects in use-of-force encounters are usually under the influence of drugs or alcohol at the time of the encounter.  
Multiple use-of-force modalities were more frequent than single ones.  
Use-of-force encounters are extremely frequent.  
Tasers are the intervention that results in the highest rate of injury.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 02-1-34

**Page-Reference:** 45

**Answer:** Suspects in use-of-force encounters are usually under the influence of drugs or alcohol at the time of the encounter.

35 **After which case did the RCMP introduce new policies for Taser use that restrict when officers can use the weapon?**

Sammy Yatim  
Vince Li  
Robert Dziekanski  
Paul Boyd  
Paul Bernardo

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 02-1-35

**Page-Reference:** 46

**Answer:** Robert Dziekanski

36 Which of the following is the least forceful option on the RCMP's Incident Management/ Intervention Model?

verbal and nonverbal communication  
officer presence  
lethal force  
intermediate weapons  
physical control

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 02-1-36

**Page-Reference:** 46-47

**Answer:** officer presence

37 Which of the following is *not* true of the use-of-force continuum?

It is an indirect method of helping to control the amount of force used by a police officer. It provides a dynamic guide that can potentially assist with use-of-force decision making. Following the continuum completely removes the need for police discretion in use-of-force situations.

The continuum encourages officers to continually assess their surroundings. Lethal force is one of the use-of-force options included in the continuum.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 02-1-37

**Page-Reference:** 46-47

**Answer:** Following the continuum completely removes the need for police discretion in use-of-force situations.

**38 Results from Duxbury and Higgins' (2012) study of police stress indicate that:**

police officers in Canada experience much less stress relative to police in other countries. psychological services within Canadian police forces are under-utilized by officers who really need them.

occupational stressors are the leading cause of stress among Canadian police officers.

public stressors cause more stress for police officers relative to both occupational and organizational stressors.

police officers experience significant difficulty balancing their work and home life.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 02-1-38

**Page-Reference:** 49

**Answer:** police officers experience significant difficulty balancing their work and home life.

**39 Police officers are exposed to a wide range of stressors. Experiencing a lack of cooperation between neighbouring jurisdictions is an example of:**

public stressors  
inter-organizational stressors  
criminal justice stressors  
occupational stressors  
intra-organizational stressors

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:**  
02-1-3  
9

**Page-  
Reference:** 50

**Answer:** inter-organizational  
stressors

40 **The press has been distorting the facts of a particular case on which a police officer is working.  
. This is an example of:**

an organizational stressor  
an occupational stressor  
a criminal justice stressor  
a public stressor  
an extrinsic stressor

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:**  
02-1-4  
0

**Page-  
Reference:** 50

**Answer:** a public  
stressor

41 **A police officer witnesses a fellow officer being killed. This is an example  
. of:**

an organizational stressor  
an occupational stressor  
a criminal justice stressor  
a public stressor  
a police-specific stressor

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 02-1-4  
1

**Page-Reference:** 50

**Answer:** an occupational stressor

- 42 Jared is frustrated in his job as a police officer due to inconsistent leadership from his superior officers, feeling like he always has to prove himself within his precinct, bureaucratic red tape, excessive paperwork, and feeling like there is no room for advancement. What type of stressor is influencing Jared's job the most?

public  
criminal justice  
organizational  
occupational  
extrinsic

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 02-1-4  
2

**Page-Reference:** 50

**Answer:** organizational

- 43 According to Taylor and Bennell (2006) \_\_\_\_\_ stressors are often ranked as the most stressful among police officers.

public  
criminal justice  
organizational  
extrinsic  
none of the above

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

02-1-43

**Page-Reference:**

51

**Answer:**

organizational

44 **Possible consequences associated with police stress fall into three general categories. These are:**

physical health problems/psychological problems/job performance problems  
occupational/organizational/criminal justice  
adaptive/maladaptive/neutral  
proactive/reactive/inhibitory  
psychological/physical/mental

**Difficulty:**

Easy

**QuestionID:**

02-1-44

**Page-Reference:**

51-54

**Answer:** physical health problems/psychological problems/job performance problems

45 **Recent research conducted by McCoy and Aamodt (2010) has compared the divorce rate amongst law enforcement personnel to the divorce rate in the general population. What did they find?**

The divorce rate among law enforcement personnel is higher than the divorce rate in the general population.

The divorce rate among law enforcement personnel is lower than the divorce rate in the general population.

The divorce rate among law enforcement personnel is equal to the divorce rate in the general population.

Differences in divorce rates between the two groups existed, but only for people over the age of 50.

There is no difference in the divorce rates among law enforcement personnel and the general population.

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

02-1-45

**Page-Reference:**

53

**Answer:** The divorce rate among law enforcement personnel is lower than the divorce rate in the general population.

46 **Which of the following refers to training delivered to police officers to improve their ability to effectively adapt to stress and adversity?**

- Communication accommodation training
- Communicative needs-based training
- Resiliency training
- Sparks protocol Training
- Critical incident stress training

**Difficulty:**

Easy

**QuestionID:**

02-1-46

**Page-Reference:**

54

**Answer:** Resiliency training

47 \_\_\_\_\_ is a psychologically-oriented intervention delivered to police officers following exposure to an event that resulted in psychological distress and an impairment of normal functioning.

Cognitive behavioral therapy  
Eye movement desensitization and reprocessing  
Psychological debriefing  
Rorschach inkblot decomposition  
Neural organization technique

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 02-1-4  
7

**Page-Reference:** 55

**Answer:** Psychological debriefing

## Chapter 02 Short Answer Questions

1. In general, there are two stages involved in developing a valid police selection process. Name these stages and explain them briefly.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 02-2-01

**Page-Reference:** 31-33

**Answer:** a. *The job analysis stage:* the police agency must define the knowledge, skills, and abilities (KSAs) that characterize a "good" police officer.  
b. *The construction and validation stage:* The police agency must develop instruments to measure the degree to which applicants possess these KSAs (i.e., construction) and determine the extent to which the applicants' scores on these instruments correspond to actual police performance (i.e., validation).

2. Name and describe two of the three most common types of police selection

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 02-2-02

**Page-Reference:** 33-37

**Answer:** a. *The selection interview:* This is a semi-structured interview intended to determine the degree to which an applicant possesses the knowledge, skills, and abilities (KSAs) that characterize a "good" police officer.  
b. *Psychological tests:* These include tests of cognitive ability that tap into skills like memory and logic (e.g., RPAT) and personality tests that attempt to identify stress reactions, interpersonal styles, and psychopathological problems (e.g., MMPI).  
c. *Assessment centres:* This refers to facilities in which police-related behaviours can be observed by multiple raters usually in the context of simulated tasks (i.e., situational tests).

3. Define "police discretion" and name three areas of policing in which discretion is often used.

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 02-2-03

**Page-Reference:** 38, 39-4241-44

**Answer:** - Police discretion is the quality that enables officers to discriminate between those situations that require strict adherence to the law and those in which a certain amount of latitude is justified.  
- Typically, police officers are called upon to use a degree of discretion when dealing with cases of youth crime, mentally ill offenders, domestic disturbances, and cases involving the potential use of force.

4. List four reasons why police discretion is necessary, as indicated by Sheehan and Cordner (1989).

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 02-2-04

**Page-Reference:** 39

**Answer:** - A police officer who attempts to enforce all the laws all the time would be in the police station and in court all the time and thus of little use when serious problems arise in the community.

- Legislatures pass some laws that they clearly do not intend to have strictly enforced all the time.
- Legislatures pass some laws that are vague, making it necessary for the police to interpret them and decide when to apply them.
- Most law violations are minor in nature, such as driving slightly over the posted speed limit, and do not require full enforcement of the law.
- Full enforcement of all the laws all the time would alienate the public and undermine support for the police.
- Full enforcement of all the laws all the time would overwhelm the criminal justice system, including the prisons.
- The police have many duties to perform with limited resources; good judgment must therefore be used in establishing enforcement priorities.

5. **You are a police officer who has encountered a mentally ill person causing a disturbance. What are the three main options available to you in this situation? Identify a disadvantage associated with each.**

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 02-2-0  
5

**Page-Reference:** 41-42

**Answer:** a. The individual can be arrested and taken to jail.

- This approach may result in the mentally ill offender being "criminalized" (i.e., dealt with by the criminal justice system when it may actually be more useful for this person to be treated in the mental health system).

b. The individual can be taken to a psychiatric/mental health institution

- Due to legal difficulties and/or bureaucratic obstacles, the mentally ill offender may be refused admittance.

c. You can attempt to resolve the matter in an informal fashion.

- This may only be a short-term solution given that the individual will likely not receiving the mental health care he or she requires.

6. **What are the main conclusions from Hall and Votova's (2013) study of use-of-force?**

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 02-2-0  
6

**Page-Reference:** 45

7. Name four main sources of police stress and provide an example of each.

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 02-2-0  
7

**Page-Reference:** 48-51

**Answer:** a. Intra-organizational stress (e.g., excessive paperwork)  
b. Inter-organizational stress (e.g., jurisdictional isolationism – lack of cooperation between neighbouring jurisdictions)  
c. Occupational stressors (e.g., exposure to human suffering)  
d. Criminal justice stressors (e.g., unfavourable court decisions)  
e. Public stressors (e.g., media distortions regarding certain cases)

## Chapter 03: The Psychology of Police Investigations

### Chapter 03 Multiple Choice Questions

1. One of the major goals of accusatory-based police interrogations is to:

build rapport with the suspect.  
identify whether the suspect can understand their legal rights.  
clear other unsolved cases.  
threaten the suspect with harsh sanctions.  
obtain a confession of guilt from the suspect.

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 03-1-0  
1

**Page-Reference:** 58

**Answer:** obtain a confession of guilt from the suspect.

2. One of the main concerns in the case *Brown v. Mississippi* (1936) was:

the use of physical coercion to obtain a confession.  
the use of criminal profiling in court.  
the low standard for admitting expert testimony.  
the right to plead not guilty by reason of insanity.  
the high number of convictions of Caucasians.

**Difficulty:** Moderat  
e

**QuestionID:** 03-1-02

**Page-Reference:** 58

**Answer:** the use of physical coercion to obtain a confession.

3. **Officer Lively is an undercover agent posing as a member of the local branch of the Hells Angels. He is attempting to lure a young adult named Joe into the gang. Joe also is a suspect in an ongoing investigation of a gang-related homicide. The officer rewards Joe for minor criminal activity and promotes gang membership as a lucrative club where Joe can be accepted and have access to all the cash, guns, drugs, and women he wants. He tells Joe that "the boss" wants to interview him for a "job" in the gang, and as part of this he needs to confess to a serious crime (the one under investigation). His confession is insurance that he can be trusted by the gang, and it is offered that the gang can help him out by making evidence "disappear". Once Joe confesses, this is used against him in trial. What technique is Officer Lively using to gain a confession?**

maximization techniques  
criminal profiling  
the good cop-bad cop routine  
the Mr. Big technique  
minimization techniques

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 03-1-03

**Page-Reference:** 59

**Answer:** the Mr. Big technique

4. **Approximately 1 hour into an interrogation, Constable McCardle asked the suspect "Did you plan the killing of his wife OR did it just happen"? This type of question is the basis of which step in the Reid model of interrogation?**

step 4 – overcoming objections.  
step 8 – developing an admission into a full confession  
step 2 – developing psychological themes  
step 5 – regaining the suspect's attention  
step 7 – using the alternative explanations technique

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 03-1-04

**Page-Reference:** 60-61

**Answer:** step 7 – using the alternative explanations technique

5. **Maximization techniques are also called \_\_\_\_\_ tactics; minimization techniques are also called \_\_\_\_\_ tactics.**

soft sell/scare  
heavy/compassion  
scare/soft sell  
compassion/scare  
intimidation/sympathy

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 03-1-05

**Page-Reference:** 62

**Answer:** scare/soft sell

6. **While interrogating Sam House, Officer Fallon states, "Look, they should never leave liquor in a store window to tempt honest guys like you and me." Officer Fallon's statement is an example of which category of interrogation tactic?**

minimization  
maximization  
a scare tactic  
a baiting question  
good cop-bad cop

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 03-1-06

**Page-Reference:** 62

**Answer:**  
minimization

7. **While interrogating Mrs. Garneau, Officer Hamilton states, "Look, I've got three eyewitnesses that say you did it and your fingerprints are all over the gun found at the scene." Officer Hamilton's statement is an example of which category of interrogation tactic?**

minimization  
maximization  
a soft sell tactic  
a baiting question  
good cop-bad cop

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 03-1-07

**Page-Reference:** 62

**Answer:**  
maximization

8. **Officer Gardner is interrogating James concerning an alleged assault with a weapon against an umpire following a baseball game. Officer Gardner tells James "I understand why you acted this way, the guy made some bad calls and 'had it coming'". The officer is employing what step in the Reid model of interrogation?**

Immediately confronting the suspect with his guilt.  
Developing psychological themes to allow suspect to rationalize crime.  
Drawing in the suspects attention to prevent them from withdrawing.  
Presenting an alternative question to get the suspect to agree and confess.  
Interrupting statements of denial to maintain control of the interrogation.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 03-1-08

**Page-Reference:** 61-62

**Answer:** Developing psychological themes to allow suspect to rationalize crime.

9. **Officer MacDonald is interrogating Dianna concerning the suspicious death of her brother-in-law. Dianna keeps trying to tell Officer Moore that she didn't do it and has no idea what the officer is talking about. Officer MacDonald keeps telling her that they need to focus on the facts because they know she is guilty! Each time she says she didn't do it, they stop her from talking and say "we're past that" and tell her that they need to know WHY she killed her brother-in-law. The officer is employing what step in the Reid model of interrogation?**

Immediately confronting the suspect with his guilt.  
Developing psychological themes to allow suspect to rationalize crime.  
Drawing in the suspects attention to prevent them from withdrawing.  
Presenting an alternative question to get the suspect to agree and confess.  
Interrupting statements of denial to maintain control of the interrogation.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 03-1-09

**Page-Reference:** 61-62

**Answer:** Interrupting statements of denial to maintain control of the interrogation.

- 10 **Kassin et al. (2007) conducted a survey of investigators about their interrogation practices. They found that investigators rarely reported instances of using threats or physical intimidation. Why should this result be interpreted with caution?**

The videos analyzed for this study only showed the behaviour of the suspect and not the investigator.  
This was a self-report study and the investigators' responses may have been biased to make themselves look better.  
Much police intimidation occurs outside of the interrogation room, so not captured on film.  
The researchers may have received a biased sample of only those officers who use "good cop" routines.  
These techniques are considered illegal so police officers should not be using them in the first place.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 03-1-1  
0

**Page-Reference:** 62

**Answer:** This was a self-report study and the investigators' responses may have been biased to make themselves look better.

11 **Which of the following statements is true with respect to the findings of King and Snook's (2009) examination of Canadian interrogations?**

Canadian interrogations appear to be extremely coercive.  
Components of the Reid model are frequently used in Canadian interrogations.  
Canadian police interrogators frequently exaggerate the seriousness of offences.  
It appears that some suspects were not read their legal rights.  
Interrogations lasting more than 12 hours were not uncommon.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 03-1-1  
1

**Page-Reference:** 63

**Answer:** It appears that some suspects were not read their legal rights.

12 **Of the following Reid technique *themes* analyzed in King and Snook's (2009) examination of Canadian interrogations, which was most prevalent in the interrogations?**

play one suspect against the other  
appeal to the suspect's pride with flattery  
minimize the seriousness of the offence  
suggest noncriminal intent for the offence  
sympathize with the suspect by condemning others

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 03-1-1  
2

**Page-Reference:** 63

**Answer:** appeal to the suspect's pride with flattery

13 **In the United States, a suspect's interrogation rights are often called:**

*Marianne rights*  
*Monica rights*  
*Miranda rights*  
*Marissa rights*  
*Melissa rights*

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 03-1-1  
3

**Page-Reference:** 64

**Answer:** *Miranda* rights

14 **Eastwood and Snook (2010) has examined the degree to which people understand their right-to-silence and their right-to-legal counsel. What did these researchers find?**

In general, people had difficulty understanding their rights.  
Presenting legal rights in written format appears to increase comprehension of those rights.  
Presenting legal rights one element at a time appears to increase comprehension of those rights.  
Self-reported confidence in one's own comprehension of one's legal rights is not a good predictor of actual comprehension.  
All of the above.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 03-1-14

**Page-Reference:** 66-67

**Answer:** All of the above.

15 **What group of individuals, who are highly vulnerable to *misunderstanding* their interrogation rights, did Eastwood, Snook, and Luther (2015) study?**

- individuals with impaired intellectual capacity
- individuals with severe mental illness
- domestic violence victims
- high school students
- victims of child sexual abuse

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 03-1-15

**Page-Reference:** 67

**Answer:** high school students

16 **Which of the following has been identified as a problem with the Reid model of interrogation?**

- The techniques included in the Reid model will rarely be approved of by the courts.
- The Reid model incorrectly assumes that investigators can accurately detect when a suspect is lying.
- The techniques used in the Reid model decrease the chance that people will falsely confess.
- The Reid model has been classified as a soft approach to interrogations.
- The Reid model does not allow officers to conduct interrogations when there is no physical evidence.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 03-1-16

**Page-Reference:** 64-67

**Answer:** The Reid model incorrectly assumes that investigators can accurately detect when a suspect is lying.

- 17 **As related to police interrogations, Kassin and his colleagues (2003) discovered several important findings regarding investigator bias. Which of the following was *not* one of their conclusions?**

Interrogators with guilty expectations tend to use a higher frequency of interrogation techniques compared to interrogators with innocent expectations.

Suspects generally have accurate perceptions of the investigator's expectations of guilt or innocence.

Neutral observers tend to view interrogators with guilty expectations as more coercive, especially against suspects who are actually guilty.

Neutral observers tend to view suspects being interrogated by an officer with guilty expectations as being more defensive.

Interrogators with guilty expectations tend to ask more questions that convey their belief of guilt.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:**  
03-1-1  
7

**Page-Reference:** 67-68

**Answer:** Neutral observers tend to view interrogators with guilty expectations as more coercive, especially against suspects who are actually guilty.

- 18 **In order to be admitted as evidence in Canadian courts, confessions must be \_\_\_\_\_ and the confessor must be \_\_\_\_\_.**

given voluntarily, at least 21 years of age

written down, competent

provided when a lawyer is present, supported by corroborative evidence

given voluntarily, competent

provided when a lawyer is present, at least 21 years old

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:**  
03-1-1  
8

**Page-Reference:** 68

**Answer:** given voluntarily,  
competent

19 Which of the following police interrogation practices would *not* be acceptable by Canadian legal standards?

- exaggerating the infallibility of polygraph tests
- minimizing the seriousness of the crimes that were committed
- implying that psychiatric assistance can be made available if the suspect confesses
- depriving the suspect of sleep
- none of the above are legally condoned

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 03-1-1  
9

**Page-Reference:** 69

**Answer:** depriving the suspect of sleep

20 The model of police interrogation used in North America is \_\_\_\_\_ and the model used in Britain is \_\_\_\_\_.

- accusatorial, accusatorial
- inquisitorial, admissible
- inquisitorial, accusatorial
- accusatorial, inquisitorial
- inadmissible, admissible

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 03-1-2  
0

**Page-Reference:** 70

**Answer:** accusatorial, inquisitorial

21 Which of the following is *not* part of the PEACE model of investigative interviewing?

Planning and preparation  
Engage and explain  
Accuse  
Closure  
Evaluation

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 03-1-2  
1

**Page-  
Reference:** 70

**Answer:**  
Accuse

**22 The primary goal of the PEACE model of investigative interviewing is to:**

obtain a confession.  
obtain complete and accurate information about the crime.  
utilize minimization techniques only in questioning suspects.  
eliminate the need for use of any investigative coercion practices.  
teach police officers how to use calming strategies during stressful interviews.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 03-1-22

**Page-  
Reference:** 70

**Answer:** obtain complete and accurate information about the crime.

**23 Officer Parneau has recently completed a training course in investigative interviewing, and has implemented these techniques in her policing. She now seeks to use more open-ended questions in her interrogations, and to ultimately obtain complete and accurate information about the crime, rather than simply a confession. What model of interrogation is Officer Parneau using?**

QA model  
Reid model  
Inquisition model  
Kassin model  
PEACE model

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

03-1-23

**Page-Reference:**

68-70

**Answer:** PEACE model

- 24 **Brenda steals a turkey from the local grocery store. When interrogated by the police, she confesses to stealing the turkey. During her trial, the confession is thrown out because Brenda was not properly read her rights upon arrest. What term best describes this confession?**

a coerced-compliant false confession  
a coerced-internalized false confession  
a retracted confession  
a voluntary false confession  
a disputed confession

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

03-1-24

**Page-Reference:**

71

**Answer:** a disputed confession

- 25 **It is estimated that approximately \_\_\_\_\_% of cases where prisoners have been exonerated through DNA testing contained a false confession.**

1  
25  
50  
75  
100

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 03-1-25

**Page-Reference:** 71

**Answer:**  
25

26 **When questioned by police, Noah confesses to a burglary that occurred on his street. Later, when his defence attorney is preparing his case for court, Noah declares the confession he gave to the police was false. This is an example of:**

- a coerced-compliant false confession
- a coerced-internalized false confession
- a retracted confession
- a voluntary false confession
- a disputed confession

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 03-1-26

**Page-Reference:** 71

**Answer:** a retracted confession

27 **Which of the following was *not* identified by Gudjonsson (1992) as a vulnerability factor associated with the occurrence of voluntary false confessions?**

the confessor's need to make up for pathological feelings of guilt  
the confessor's desire for notoriety  
the confessor's desire to protect someone else  
the confessor's level of suggestibility  
the confessor's inability to distinguish fact from fantasy

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 03-1-27

**Page-Reference:** 72

**Answer:** the confessor's level of suggestibility

28 **According to your textbook, the most common type of false confession is:**

voluntary  
coerced-compliant  
coerced-internalized  
retracted  
disputed

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 03-1-28

**Page-Reference:** 73

**Answer:** coerced-compliant

29 **An innocent suspect is interrogated for 18 hours without food or water. The suspect is told by the investigator that he can get up and leave once "he comes clean." The suspect is exhausted and confesses. What type of confession has just occurred?**

a voluntary false confession  
a coerced-compliant false confession  
a compliant-internalized false confession  
a coerced-internalized false confession  
a confabulated false confession

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 03-1-29

**Page-Reference:** 73

**Answer:** a coerced-compliant false confession

- 30 **An innocent suspect is interrogated for 22 hours about a life-threatening injury to her young infant. She keeps asking if she can go to the hospital to see her daughter, but is refused. The police investigator says that she can see her daughter when she confesses and that if she cooperates she will be given a lenient sentence. Although she knows she is innocent, she confesses. This is an example of a:**

voluntary false confession  
coerced-internalized false confession  
coerced-compliant false confession  
confabulated confession  
true confession

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 03-1-30

**Page-Reference:** 73

**Answer:** coerced-compliant false confession

- 31 **Which of the following was *not* identified by Gudjonsson (1992) as a vulnerability factor associated with the occurrence of coerced-internalized false confessions?**

The confessor's history of substance use.  
The confessor experiencing severe anxiety and confusion.  
The confessor's desire to protect someone else.  
The confessor's feelings of generalized guilt.  
The confessor's inability to distinguish fact from fantasy.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 03-1-3  
1

**Page-  
Reference:** 74

**Answer:** The confessor's desire to protect someone else.

32 **The Billy Wayne Cope case was used in your text as an example of what type of confession?**

coerced-internalized false confession  
voluntary false confession  
disputed confession  
coerced-compliant false confession  
retracted confession

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 03-1-32

**Page-  
Reference:** 74-75

**Answer:** coerced-internalized false confession

33 **A man is accused of sexually abusing his one-year old daughter. He initially denies his involvement, but the police persist in telling him that "abusers often don't remember their actions" and that it would help if he tried to visualize the abusive incidents. Although he did not commit these crimes, he comes to remember images of him engaging in abusive acts, and begins to believe he is guilty, so he confesses. This is an example of a:**

voluntary false confession  
coerced-internalized false confession  
coerced-compliant false confession  
confabulated confession  
disputed confession

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

03-1-33

**Page-Reference:**

74-75

**Answer:** coerced-internalized false confession

- 34 In a study by Kassin and Keichel (1996), students were brought into the lab in order to examine the phenomenon of false confessions. Subjects were accused of committing a crime (hitting a forbidden computer key) that they had in fact not committed. Two factors were manipulated: the participant's level of vulnerability and whether false evidence was presented. What did this research find?

Participants never exhibited compliance when accused of the crime.  
Participants presented with false evidence were more likely to internalize their guilt.  
Participants presented with false evidence were less likely to confabulate details.  
The presence of false evidence had no influence on compliance or internalization.  
Participants presented with a rationalization thought they would be penalized.

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

03-1-34

**Page-Reference:**

75-77

**Answer:** Participants presented with false evidence were more likely to internalize their guilt.

- 35 The tendency to go along with demands made by people perceived to be in authority, even though the person may not agree with them is known as:

yielding  
internalization  
confabulation  
reactance  
compliance

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

03-1-35

**Page-Reference:**

76

**Answer:**

compliance

- 36 Which of the following is *not* one of the reasons proposed by Appleby, Hasel, and Kassin (2013) as to why jurors are unlikely to identify false confessions?

Jurors are unable to accurately distinguish between true and false confessions  
False confessions can be highly similar to true confessions with respect to their form and content.

Jurors are unlikely to believe that a person would make statements that counter self-interest.  
Jurors, like most members of the public, are poor detectors of deception.

False confessions are often very strange and bizarre, and seem too odd not to be true which increases their believability.

**Difficulty:**

Hard

**QuestionID:**

03-1-36

**Page-Reference:**

77-78

**Answer:** False confessions are often very strange and bizarre, and seem too odd not to be true which increases their believability.

- 37 Criminal profiling is likely to be *least* useful in cases involving:

serial homicide  
serial rape  
serial burglary  
a serial offender with severe psychopathology  
both b and c

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 03-1-3  
7

**Page-Reference:** 80

**Answer:** serial  
burglary

38 Which of the following was *not* proposed as a purpose of criminal profiling in your textbook?

flushing out the offender  
prioritizing suspects  
identifying new lines of inquiry  
providing evidence of guilt in court  
developing strategies for suspect interrogation

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 03-1-38

**Page-Reference:** 80

**Answer:** providing evidence of guilt in court

39 The first known criminal investigation where criminal profiling was used was:

the New York Mad Bomber investigation in the 1950s  
the Jack the Ripper murders in the 1880s  
the John Duffy serial rape case in the 1980s  
the Ted Bundy serial murders in the 1970s  
profiling was not used in any of these cases

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 03-1-3  
9

**Page-  
Reference:** 81

**Answer:** the Jack the Ripper murders in the  
1880s

40 **The RCMP's ViCLAS system was established in an attempt to remedy the problem of:**

linkage blindness  
ambiguous profiles  
racial profiling  
police officer bias  
geographic profiling

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 03-1-40

**Page-  
Reference:** 83

**Answer:** linkage  
blindness

41 **According to your textbook, what is the primary disadvantage of the inductive method of criminal profiling?**

It will never be possible to obtain a representative sample of serial offenders upon which to draw profiling conclusions.

The logical foundations upon which the profiling predictions are based might be flawed.

Data related to serial homicide cases does not exist.

The method is too vague.

No profiler uses the inductive method of profiling.

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

03-1-41

**Page-Reference:**

84

**Answer:** It will never be possible to obtain a representative sample of serial offenders upon which to draw profiling conclusions.

- 42 **Detective Johnson is trying to predict an offender's background characteristics based on comparing that offender's crimes with similar crimes committed by other, known offenders. Detective Johnson is engaging in what type of profiling?**

deductive criminal profiling  
demographic profiling  
geographic profiling  
inductive criminal profiling  
investigative model profiling

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

03-1-42

**Page-Reference:**

84

**Answer:** inductive criminal profiling

- 43 **Which of the following is *not* a characteristic of a disorganized offender?**

lives far away from his crimes  
lives alone  
does not have vehicle  
is sexually inadequate  
has little interest in the media

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 03-1-4  
3

**Page-Reference:** 84-85

**Answer:** lives far away from his crimes

44 **The FBI's organized-disorganized approach to criminal profiling is based on a model of personality called the:**

five-factor model  
conditional trait model  
situationist model  
classic trait model  
schema model

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 03-1-4  
4

**Page-Reference:** 87-88

**Answer:** classic trait model

45 **Alison, Smith, Eastman, and Rainbow (2003) examined 21 written criminal profiles that were used in major criminal investigations. Their examination of every prediction revealed that approximately \_\_\_\_\_% of those predictions were vague.**

1  
25  
50  
75  
100

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

03-1-45

**Page-Reference:**

89

**Answer:**

25

46 **When conducting a meta-analysis of the accuracy of profiling, Snook et al. (2007) concluded that self-labelled profilers:**

consistently and highly outperformed the comparison groups.  
displayed somewhat better performance than comparison groups across most measures, but not expert performance.  
did not perform any differently when compared to other nonprofiler groups.  
performed much worse than experienced veteran police officers.  
performed less accurately than other law enforcement professionals and clinical psychologists.

**Difficulty:**

Hard

**QuestionID:**

03-1-46

**Page-Reference:**

90

**Answer:** displayed somewhat better performance than comparison groups across most measures, but not expert performance.

47 **Which of the following is the basic assumption underlying geographic profiling?**

Offenders will commit their crimes in their immediate neighbourhood.  
Offenders tend not to travel far from home to commit their crimes.  
Offenders only target areas they know very well.  
Offenders travel far distances from home to commit crimes to avoid detection.  
Offenders will sometimes move residences while committing a series of crimes.

**Difficulty:** Moderate  
**QuestionID:** 03-1-47  
**Page-Reference:** 91

**Answer:** Offenders tend not to travel far from home to commit their crimes.

48 It is more likely that a \_\_\_\_\_ can be geographically profiled accurately than a \_\_\_\_\_.

travelling offender, non-travelling offender  
non-travelling offender, travelling offender  
non-serial offender, serial offender  
serial offender, sequential offender  
commuter, marauder

**Difficulty:** Moderate  
**QuestionID:** 03-1-48  
**Page-Reference:** 91

**Answer:** non-travelling offender, travelling offender

49 Computer systems that use mathematical models of offender spatial behaviour to make predictions about where unknown serial offenders are likely to reside are known as:

geographic profiling systems  
time-space-people analytical systems  
probability spatial function systems  
nearest neighbour geographic system  
violent crime linkage analysis system

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:**  
03-1-4  
9

**Page-  
Reference:** 91

**Answer:** violent crime linkage analysis  
system

- 50 **Detective Carlisle is a profiler with the local police force, and is utilizing mathematical models to determine the likely home location of an offender who has committed a series of crimes. The detective is using what form of profiling?**

deductive criminal profiling  
racial profiling  
geographic profiling  
inductive criminal profiling  
demographic profiling

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:**  
03-1-5  
0

**Page-  
Reference:** 90

**Answer:** geographic  
profiling

### Chapter 03 Short Answer Questions

1. **List the two primary goals of a police interrogation (accusatorial and non-accusatorial). In addition, describe the three types of false confessions that can result from North American–style police interrogation techniques. Please make it clear how they differ from one another.**

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 03-2-01

**Page-Reference:** 58, 68-70,  
72-75

**Answer:** - The two primary goals of a police interrogation are:

a. To gain information that will further the investigation

b. To obtain a confession from the suspect

- The three types of false confessions are:

a. *Voluntary false confession:* The suspect confesses voluntarily to a crime he/she did not commit without elicitation or coercion from a police interrogator.

b. *Coerced-compliant false confession:* Although fully aware of his/her innocence, the suspect confesses to a crime he/she did not commit as a product of coercive interrogation techniques used by the police.

c. *Coerced-internalized false confession:* The suspect recalls and confesses to a crime he/she did not commit, usually after being exposed to suggestible questions by interrogators.

2. **What is the name of the interrogation model that is most often taught to police officers in North America? Describe the model's three-part process.**

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 03-2-02

**Page-Reference:** 60

**Answer:** - The model of interrogation that is most often taught to police officers in North America is the Reid model of interrogation.

- *Stage 1:* gather crime-related evidence and interview witnesses and victims

- *Stage 2:* conduct a non-accusatorial interview of the suspect to assess guilt

- *Stage 3:* if the suspect is perceived to be guilty, conduct an accusatorial interrogation of the suspect using the nine-step procedure in order to obtain a confession

3. **What does the acronym for the PEACE model of interrogation stand for? Describe the primary goal of this model, and provide one example of how Canadian police officers are not adhering to the principles advocated by the PEACE model.**

**Difficulty:** Moderate  
**QuestionID:** 03-2-03  
**Page-Reference:** 68-70

**Answer:** - PEACE is an acronym for *planning* and *preparation*, *engage* and *explain*, *account*, *closure*, and *evaluation*.  
- this model provides an inquisitorial framework within which to conduct police interrogations (compared with the accusatorial framework used in the Reid model) and is based on an interview method known as conversation management, which encourages information gathering more than securing a confession  
- As highlighted above, rather than focusing on extracting confessions, the primary goal of a PEACE interview would be to obtain complete and accurate information about the crime in question; information that will ultimately allow investigators to conduct a more efficient and effective investigation  
- Canadian interrogators rarely rely on questioning practices that will allow them to maximize the amount of complete and accurate information that is collected. For example, open-ended questions were used much less frequently (<1% of all questions) than close-ended questions (approximately 40% of all questions) in the interviews analyzed by Snook et al., despite the fact that research consistently demonstrates that an interviewer can extract a higher quantity of information from suspects, and more accurate information, when they allow the interviewee to do most of the talking.

**4. Define what is meant by minimization and maximization techniques and provide one example of each technique.**

**Difficulty:** Moderate  
**QuestionID:** 03-2-04  
**Page-Reference:** 62

**Answer:** - *Minimization techniques*: soft sell interrogation tactics used by the police in an attempt to draw the suspect into a false sense of security (e.g., offering justifications for the offence, showing sympathy, making excuses, etc.)  
- *Maximization techniques*: scare tactics used by the police in an attempt to intimidate the suspect who is believed to be guilty (e.g., making false claims of evidence, exaggerating the seriousness of the offence, etc.)

**5. Distinguish between a retracted confession and a disputed confession.**

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 03-2-05

**Page-Reference:** 71

**Answer:** *Retracted confession:* involves a suspect/defendant declaring that the confession he or she made is false. *Disputed confession:* involves a confession that is challenged in court due to legal technicalities or because a suspect/defendant denies the confession was ever made.

**6. What are the three main types of false confessions proposed by Kassin and Wrightsman (1985)? Describe each and identify the situation where each are likely to arise.**

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 03-2-06

**Page-Reference:** 72-75

**Answer:** **Voluntary false confessions** occur when someone voluntarily confesses to a crime he or she did not commit without any elicitation from the police. Research has indicated that people voluntarily false confess for a variety of reasons. For example, Gudjonsson (1992) suggested that such confessions may arise out of (1) a morbid desire for notoriety, (2) the person being unable to distinguish fact from fantasy, (3) the need to make up for pathological feelings of guilt by receiving punishment, or (4) a desire to protect somebody else from harm (which may be particularly prevalent among juveniles).

**Coerced-compliant false confessions** are those in which the suspect confesses to a crime, even though the suspect is fully aware that he or she did not commit it. This type of false confession is perhaps the most common (Gudjonsson & MacKeith, 1988). Unlike voluntary false confessions, these confessions are caused by the use of coercive interrogation tactics on the part of the police, such as the maximization techniques described earlier. Specifically, coerced-compliant confessions may be given so the suspect can (1) escape further interrogation, (2) gain a promised benefit, or (3) avoid a threatened punishment (Gudjonsson, 1992).

The third, and perhaps the most bizarre type of false confession proposed by Kassin and Wrightsman (1985) is the **coerced-internalized false confession**. Here, individuals recall and confess to a crime they did not commit, usually after they are exposed to highly suggestible questions, such as the minimization techniques described earlier in the chapter (Gudjonsson, 2003). In contrast to the coerced-compliant false confessor, however, these individuals actually end up believing they are responsible for the crime. According to Gudjonsson (1992), several vulnerability factors are associated with this type of false confession, including (1) a history of substance abuse or some other interference with brain function, (2) the inability of people to detect discrepancies between what they observed and what has been erroneously suggested to them, and (3) factors associated with mental state, such as severe anxiety, confusion, or feelings of guilt.

**7. Define criminal profiling, and provide four main goals of criminal profiling.**

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:**  
03-2-0  
7

**Page-  
Reference:** 79-81

**Answer:** - Criminal profiling is a method by which one attempts to identify personality, behavioural, and/or demographic characteristics of an offender on the basis of the characteristics of the crimes he or she has committed.

- Goals of criminal profiling:

- a. To flush out an offender
- b. To determine whether a threatening note should be taken seriously
- c. To provide advice on how to best interrogate a suspect
- d. To provide prosecutors with strategies that will help them "break down" the suspect/defendant in cross-examination

8. **Goodwill, Lehmann, Beauregard, and Andrei (2016) examined the relationship between crime scene behaviours and background characteristics for a sample of serial sex offenders. Describe the three different ways these offenders select their victims. Also describe the three clusters of background characteristics they identified.**

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:**  
03-2-0  
8

**Page-  
Reference:** 86

**Answer:** Victim Selection:

- 1) offenders who predominantly target adult females with specific physical features (telio specific);
- (2) offenders who predominantly target child and adolescent victims with specific physical features (pedo/hebe specific); and
- (3) offenders who don't appear to have a preferred victim type (non-specific).

Background Characteristics:

- (1) the socially competent offender;
- (2) the anti-social generalist offender; and
- (3) the sexually deviant offender.

9. **Define deductive criminal profiling and inductive criminal profiling. Identify a problem associated with each method.**

**Difficulty:**

**QuestionID:** 03-2-09

**Page-Reference:** 84

**Answer:** - *Deductive profiling*: involves the prediction of an offender's background characteristics by analysing the crime scene evidence left by that particular offender. The main problem with this approach is that the logical foundations upon which the profiling predictions are based might be flawed.  
- *Inductive profiling*: involves the prediction of an offender's background characteristics on the basis of a statistical comparison of that particular offender's crimes with similar crimes committed by other, known offenders. The main problem with this approach is that it will never be possible to obtain a representative sample of offenders from which to draw valid profiling conclusions.

- 10 **List five crime scene behaviours that are believed to relate to organized offenders and five crime scene behaviours that are believed to related to disorganized offenders.**

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 03-2-10

**Page-Reference:** 85

**Answer:** - *Organized*: planned offence, use of restraints, ante-mortem sexual acts, use of vehicle in the crime, no post-mortem mutilation, corpse not taken, little evidence left at the scene  
- *Disorganized*: spontaneous offence, no restraints used, post-mortem sexual acts, no use of vehicle in the crime, post-mortem mutilation, corpse or body parts taken, evidence left at the scene

- 11 **List five background characteristics that are believed to relate to organized offenders and five background characteristics that are believed to related to disorganized offenders.**

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 03-2-11

**Page-Reference:** 85

**Answer:** - *Organized*: high intelligence, skilled occupation, sexually adequate, lives with a partner, geographically mobile, lives and works far away from crimes, follows crimes in media, maintains residence and vehicle  
- *Disorganized*: low intelligence, unskilled occupation, sexually inadequate, lives alone, geographically stable, lives and works close to crimes, little interest in media, does not maintain residence or vehicle

12 **State four criticisms of criminal profiling.**

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 03-2-12

**Page-Reference:** 87

**Answer:** - The theoretical model upon which criminal profiling is based (i.e., the classic trait approach) lacks strong empirical support.  
- The core psychological assumptions underlying profiling currently lack strong empirical support.  
- Profiles usually contain information that is vague and ambiguous. Research suggests that such information can be interpreted to fit a wide range of suspects (even if those suspects are quite different from one another).  
- In terms of the accuracy of profiles constructed, professional profilers appear to be no better than certain untrained individuals (e.g., psychologists).

**Chapter 04:  
Deception**

**Chapter 04 Multiple Choice  
Questions**

1. **Methods of detecting deception in Ancient China required suspects to do which of the following tasks?**

putting their hand on a hot iron  
walking across hot coals  
putting their arm in a cauldron of boiling water  
chewing dry rice powder  
chewing a piece of bread

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 04-1-0  
1

**Page-  
Reference:** 95

**Answer:** chewing dry rice  
powder

2. **The first polygraph test was developed  
by:**

John Larson  
William Marston  
A group of FBI researchers  
James Frye  
Hugo Munsterberg

**Difficulty:** Moderat  
e

**QuestionID:** 04-1-02

**Page-Reference:** 95

**Answer:** William Marston

3. Which of the following is *not* measured by the polygraph test?

- heart rate
- galvanic skin response
- micro facial expressions
- breathing
- the polygraph measures all of these things

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 04-1-03

**Page-Reference:** 95

**Answer:** micro facial expressions

4. The polygraph measures:

- changes in emotional arousal associated specifically with deception.
- changes in blood pressure, voice modulation, and perspiration.
- changes in blood pressure, respiration, and skin conductance.
- increases in emotional arousal in response to the control question compared to the relevant question, indicative of deception.
- changes in blood pressure, brain-wave activity, and respiration.

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 04-1-04

**Page-Reference:** 95

**Answer:** changes in blood pressure, respiration, and skin conductance.

**5. In Canada, polygraph training is provided by:**

Canadian Security Intelligence Service  
Federal Bureau of Investigation  
Central Intelligence Agency  
Canadian Police Information Centre  
the Canadian Police College

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 04-1-05

**Page-Reference:** 95

**Answer:** the Canadian Police College

**6. In Canada the polygraph is used primarily in which context?**

police investigations  
employment screening  
treatment of sexual offenders  
management of sexual offenders  
court to assess the credibility of witnesses

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 04-1-06

**Page-Reference:** 95

**Answer:** police

7. Which of the following organizations would *not* be permitted to use the polygraph to screen or test employees?

- intelligence agencies
- police services
- federal government agencies
- private management companies
- provincial government agencies

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 04-1-07

**Page-Reference:** 96

**Answer:** private management companies

8. What type of test is used to uncover information about an offender's past behaviour?

- concealed information test
- guilty knowledge test
- polygraph disclosure test
- control question test
- historical assessment test

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 04-1-08

**Page-Reference:** 96

**Answer:** polygraph disclosure test

9. Which of the following is true of the polygraph?

Polygraph results are regularly admitted as evidence in Canadian courts.  
The most common polygraph method used currently is the Comparison Question Test (CQT).

The polygraph directly measures whether a person is lying.  
Research indicates that physical countermeasures are largely ineffective in "beating" the polygraph.

Research conducted thus far indicates the polygraph is highly accurate at detecting deception.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 04-1-09

**Page-Reference:** 96, 99-102

**Answer:** The most common polygraph method used currently is the Comparison Question Test (CQT).

10 Which of the following techniques has *not* been proposed as a method of detecting deception?

ERPs  
fMRI  
"facial temperature"  
polygraph  
TAT

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 04-1-10

**Page-Reference:** 96-100, 101, 103, 104

**Answer:** TAT

11 "During the first 20 years of your life, did you ever think of seriously hurting someone?" This is an example of what type of polygraph question?

- a relevant question
- an irrelevant question
- a concealed information question
- a comparison question
- a suppressed question

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 04-1-1  
1

**Page-Reference:** 96-97

**Answer:** a comparison question

12 "Were you born in November?" This is an example of what type of polygraph question?

- irrelevant question
- relevant question
- comparison question
- suppressed question
- leading question

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 04-1-12

**Page-Reference:** 96-97

**Answer:** irrelevant question

13 Most polygraph examiners using the Comparison Question Test (CQT) score according to the:

suspect's demeanour during the test  
information from the case file  
physiological responses  
suspect's past criminal record  
gaze aversion

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 04-1-1  
3

**Page-  
Reference:** 97-98

**Answer:** physiological  
responses

- 14 **Which polygraph test does not assess deception but seeks to determine whether the suspect knows details about a crime that only the person who committed the crime would know?**

polygraph disclosure test  
comparison question test  
concealed information test  
ground truth test  
truth evasion test

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 04-1-14

**Page-  
Reference:** 98

**Answer:** concealed information  
test

- 15 **Which of the following is a criticism of the Concealed Information Test?**

It requires full disclosure from the suspect.  
The test will only work if the suspect remembers the details of the crime.  
Reactions to relevant questions may be the same for an anxious but innocent person as a guilty party.  
Arousal to crime-related questions decreases over time the more a suspect is asked about them.  
It frequently returns inconsistent results relative to other questioning methods.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 04-1-15

**Page-Reference:** 98

**Answer:** The test will only work if the suspect remembers the details of the crime.

16 **According to your textbook, what is the most common physiological response measured when administering the Concealed Information Test (CIT)?**

palmar sweating  
heart rate  
blood pressure  
eye blinks  
penile blood flow

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 04-1-16

**Page-Reference:** 98

**Answer:** palmar sweating

17 **Several types of studies may be used to validate polygraph techniques. Which type of study would likely involve a comparison of the accuracy between original examiners and blind evaluators, using actual criminal suspects?**

field analogue study  
laboratory study  
ground truth study  
guilty knowledge study  
field study

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 04-1-17

**Page-Reference:** 99

**Answer:** field study

18 **One advantage of using laboratory studies to test the accuracy of the polygraph is that \_\_\_\_\_; one disadvantage is \_\_\_\_\_ as compared to field studies.**

you have better control over the variables, ground truth cannot be established  
ground truth is known, the motivational level of the subject  
you can randomly assign subjects to innocent and guilty conditions, you have more control over the variables  
university students are used, the motivational level of the subject  
you can randomly assign subjects to innocent and guilty conditions, it is unethical

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 04-1-18

**Page-Reference:** 99

**Answer:** ground truth is known, the motivational level of the subject

19 **One disadvantage of using field studies to study deception in criminal suspects is that:**

the ground truth cannot be established.  
most are guilty reflecting a lie-bias.  
many suspects are able to fool the polygraph.  
suspects are often not motivated to be truthful.  
suspects rarely agree to be a part of a research study.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 04-1-19

**Page-Reference:** 99

**Answer:** the ground truth cannot be established.

- 20 You have been *falsely* accused of stealing a laptop computer from a professor's office. The police have requested that you take a polygraph test to prove your innocence. In light of your knowledge of the types of errors most likely to be made by different types of polygraph exams, you agree to do so only if the examiner uses the:

comparison question test  
relevant/irrelevant test  
zone of comparison format of scoring  
statement validity procedure  
concealed information test

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 04-1-20

**Page-Reference:** 99-100

**Answer:** concealed information test

- 21 In laboratory studies of the accuracy of polygraph tests, it has been found that the Comparison Question Test is \_\_\_\_\_ effective at detecting \_\_\_\_\_ suspects, whereas the Concealed Information Test is \_\_\_\_\_ effective at detecting \_\_\_\_\_ suspects.

more, guilty, more, innocent  
less, guilty, more, guilty  
more, innocent, less, guilty  
less, innocent, less, guilty  
more, guilty, less, innocent

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 04-1-2  
1

**Page-  
Reference:** 100

**Answer:** more, guilty, more,  
innocent

22 **What has been identified as a major problem particular to the Comparison Question Test (CQT)?**

high false-negative rate  
high false-positive rate  
the use of extra-polygraph cues by the examiner  
falsely classifying guilty suspects as innocent  
difficult to tell, because no North American studies have been conducted on the CQT

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 04-1-22

**Page-  
Reference:** 100

**Answer:** high false-positive  
rate

23 **What sorts of decision errors are problematic when using the Concealed Information Test (CIT)?**

false-positive errors  
false-negative errors  
true-positive errors  
true-negative errors  
false-true errors

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 04-1-23

**Page-Reference:** 100

**Answer:** false-negative errors

24 Which of the following statements concerning the use of thermal imaging to detect deception is accurate?

Thermal imaging of faces only is useful for identifying truth-tellers.  
Thermal imaging is no better than chance at identifying liars and truth-tellers.  
Trained interviewers perform better than thermal imaging to detect deception.  
Thermal imaging is highly effective at determining both liars and truth-tellers.  
Thermal imaging often misidentifies truth-tellers as liars, but accurately detects liars.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 04-1-24

**Page-Reference:** 101

**Answer:** Trained interviewers perform better than thermal imaging to detect deception.

25 Which of the following has *not* been found effective as a countermeasure to "beat" the polygraph test?

tongue-biting  
pressing toes on the floor  
counting backwards  
anti-anxiety drugs  
all of the above have been found effective as countermeasures

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 04-1-25

**Page-Reference:** 101

**Answer:** anti-anxiety drugs

26 In what case did the Supreme Court of Canada rule that polygraph evidence should not be admitted in court to help determine truthfulness?

*R. v. Hubbert*  
*R. v. Mohan*  
*R. v. Swain*  
*R. v. Beland*  
*R. v. Frye*

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 04-1-26

**Page-Reference:** 103

**Answer:** *R. v. Beland*

27 When using brain-based polygraph techniques, what does ERP stand for?

emotional response pattern  
event response pattern  
event-related brain potential  
emotional-related brain potential  
event-response pattern

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

04-1-27

**Page-Reference:**

103

**Answer:** event-related brain potential

28 **When using an ERP to detect deception, guilty suspects should respond to crime-relevant events and details with a large \_\_\_\_\_ relative to noncrime-relevant events.**

P300 response  
N100 response  
increase in blood flow  
rise in facial temperature  
activation of the frontal lobe

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

04-1-28

**Page-Reference:**

103-104

**Answer:** P300 response

29 **Testing using fMRI procedures has indicated that the areas of the brain most commonly associated with lying are:**

the temporal and frontal lobes  
the frontal lobe and the limbic system  
the amygdala and the posterior cingulate cortex  
the association cortex and temporal lobe  
the prefrontal lobe and anterior cingulate cortex

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 04-1-29

**Page-Reference:** 105

**Answer:** the prefrontal lobe and anterior cingulate cortex

30 In a study by McCabe, Castel, and Rhodes (2011), which type of lie detection test was associated with the greatest number of guilty verdicts returned by mock jurors?

the polygraph  
thermal imaging  
voice stress analysis  
fMRI lie detection  
ERP brain fingerprinting

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 04-1-30

**Page-Reference:** 105

**Answer:** fMRI lie detection

31 Which nonverbal cue has consistently been found to indicate deception?

smiling  
gaze aversion  
self-manipulations (e.g., fidgeting)  
blinking  
none of the above

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 04-1-31

**Page-Reference:** 106-108

**Answer:** none of the above

32 In a study on beliefs about lying, what was the most common stereotype about liars?

Liars avoid eye contact.  
Gut instincts are reliable indicators of deception.  
People telling the truth never say they don't remember.  
Liars often fidget and blink excessively.  
Liars speak with a higher pitch of voice.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 04-1-32

**Page-Reference:** 108

**Answer:** Liars avoid eye contact.

33 Which of the following was not listed in the text as a myth for detecting deception?

only antisocial people tell lies  
avoidance of eye contact  
deception detection is easy  
liars fidget more than truth-tellers  
men are better at catching lies than women

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 04-1-33

**Page-Reference:** 108

**Answer:** liars fidget more than truth-tellers

- 34 **Recent research by Matsumoto, Hwang, Skinner, and Frank (2011) has recommended that during interrogations, investigators should pay attention not only to what a suspect says but also the suspect's face. Why was this recommendation made?**

Evidence suggests facial temperature increases when suspects are lying. Studies have found that eye movements and gaze aversion are indicative of deception. Research suggests that micro facial expressions reflect the true emotions someone is feeling. Truth tellers have been found to display greater facial movements relative to liars. An increase in mouth and forehead movements have been linked to telling a lie.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 04-1-34

**Page-Reference:** 108-109

**Answer:** Research suggests that micro facial expressions reflect the true emotions someone is feeling.

- 35 **Which verbal indicator has been most strongly associated with deception?**

speech fillers  
voice pitch  
speech pauses  
speech errors (e.g., slips of the tongue)  
rate of speech

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 04-1-35

**Page-Reference:** 109-110

**Answer:** voice pitch

36 Which one of the following statements concerning deception detection is accurate?

Deception judgments depend more on the liar than the judge.  
Professionals are consistently better than laypersons at detecting deception.  
Relatives lying about killing their loved ones are more likely to smile than innocent suspects.  
Judgments of truthfulness are dependent upon the personality of the judge.  
Complex lies are associated with fewer cues to deception relative to simple lies.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 04-1-36

**Page-Reference:** 110-114

**Answer:** Deception judgments depend more on the liar than the judge.

37 Which of the following statements is *false*?

Liars consistently provide fewer details than truth-tellers.

Truth-tellers are less likely to change their stories.

Liars are less likely to admit to lack of memory.

Liars' stories are less fluent than the stories of truth-tellers.

Liars tell less compelling stories than truth-tellers.

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

04-1-37

**Page-**

110

**Reference:**

**Answer:** Truth-tellers are less likely to change their stories.

38 According to the meta-analysis by Aamodt and Custer (2006), the average accurate rate for detecting deception for "professional lie catchers" was:?

- under 5%
- around 10%
- around 55%
- around 25%
- around 90%

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

04-1-38

**Page-**

110

**Reference:**

**Answer:** around 55%

39 Research on the accuracy of online dating profiles has found the following is *true*.

Online daters are most likely to lie about whether they are married, divorced, or single.  
Online daters are most likely to lie about the number of children they have.  
Online daters provide most accurate information about their height and weight.  
Online daters are most accurate about whether they had children.  
Online daters always include a photo of themselves in order to increase their odds of finding a match.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 04-1-39

**Page-Reference:** 111

**Answer:** Online daters are most accurate about whether they had children.

40 **What refers to the tendency of people to judge more messages as truthful than deceptive?**

lie bias  
confidence bias  
fabrication bias  
fundamental attribution error  
truth bias

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 04-1-40

**Page-Reference:** 112

**Answer:** truth bias

41 **Melissa is participating in a deception detection study. She is given a set of 12 videos to watch and is required to indicate whether the person in the video is telling the truth or lying. She indicates that she believes 10 of the 12 to be telling the truth. Her results demonstrate what phenomenon in deception detection studies?**

A lie bias.  
The challenge of determining ground truth.  
A truth bias.  
Wizard-like detection ability.  
The cognitive complexity hypothesis.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 04-1-4  
1

**Page-  
Reference:** 112

**Answer:** A truth  
bias.

**42 Recommendations concerning training programs for improving deception detection abilities in professionals include:**

Utilizing new techniques such as thermal imaging and voice stress analysis.  
Teaching professionals how to elicit cues to deception in interviewing.  
Focusing on teaching both deception cues and truthfulness cues to counteract lie biases in professional populations.  
Instructing police officers to go "back to the basics" and rely on their gut instincts in determining truthfulness.  
Focusing on behavioural cues to deception and debunking myths about verbal cues.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 04-1-4  
2

**Page-  
Reference:** 115

**Answer:** Focusing on teaching both deception cues and truthfulness cues to counteract lie biases in professional populations.

**43 What disorder consists of symptoms that are intentionally produced or falsified in the absence of obvious external rewards?**

Munchausen syndrome  
malingering disorder  
factitious disorder  
somatoform disorder  
non-deceptive disorder

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

04-1-43

**Page-Reference:**

116

**Answer:** factitious disorder

- 44 Susan gives her infant son various medications to make him appear like he is suffering from an unknown illness, and takes him regularly to doctors and the emergency room to assess these fake symptoms. This is an example of what disorder of deception?

Munchausen syndrome by proxy  
malingering disorder  
factitious disorder  
somatoform disorder  
non-deceptive disorder

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

04-1-44

**Page-Reference:**

117

**Answer:** Munchausen syndrome by proxy

- 45 What is one of the key components to malingering?

Symptoms are not intentionally produced.  
There are only internal motivations for the production of symptoms.  
There are external motivations for the production of symptoms.  
Symptoms are produced in order to assume the sick role.  
There is an absence of external incentives.

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 04-1-4  
5

**Page-Reference:** 117

**Answer:** There are external motivations for the production of symptoms.

46 **The incidence of malingering in the general population is:**

less than 1%  
about 5%  
about 10%  
about 20%  
unknown

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 04-1-46

**Page-Reference:** 117

**Answer:**  
unknown

47 **A patient who actually has schizophrenia denies his auditory hallucinations when questioned by doctors. This patient is likely exhibiting:**

defensiveness  
Munchausen syndrome by proxy  
factitious disorder  
somatoform disorder  
malingering

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

04-1-47

**Page-Reference:**

118

**Answer:**

defensiveness

48 Which model postulates that offenders with antisocial personality disorder are more likely to malingering than other offenders?

criminological model  
pathogenic model  
adaptational model  
antisocial personality model  
DSM-5 model

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

04-1-48

**Page-Reference:**

118

**Answer:** criminological model

49 Samson is believed to be faking symptoms of physical and psychological illnesses because he has another underlying mental disorder, obsessive compulsive disorder. Which model of malingering is most applicable to this example?

criminological model  
pathogenic model  
adaptational model  
antisocial personality model  
DSM-5 model

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 04-1-49

**Page-Reference:** 118

**Answer:** pathogenic model

50 **According to research findings, the most probable explanation of malingering is captured by:**

a pathogenic model  
a criminological model  
an adaptational model  
an antisocial model  
a biosocial model

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 04-1-50

**Page-Reference:** 119

**Answer:** an adaptational model

51 **Most research on malingering uses a \_\_\_\_\_ design.**

known-groups  
simulation  
case study  
cross-sequential  
cross-sectional

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 04-1-5  
1

**Page-  
Reference:** 119

**Answer:**  
simulation

**52 Which statement is true of the ethical aspects of research on malingering?**

Studies on malingering most often provide negative incentives to participants.  
Ethics boards have disallowed the use of deception by experimenters in the study of malingering.  
While deception by experimenters has been used in research on malingering, the participants usually remain unmotivated by the made-up incentives.  
Researchers must often balance ethical concerns with attempts to increase the internal validity of their study.  
Academic journal articles will not publish research on malingering.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 04-1-52

**Page-  
Reference:** 120

**Answer:** Researchers must often balance ethical concerns with attempts to increase the internal validity of their study.

**53 Dr. Parsons conducted a study comparing a group of individuals diagnosed with post-traumatic stress disorder to a group of individuals believed to be faking post-traumatic stress disorder in order to obtain worker's compensation. What type of study design is Dr. Parsons using to investigate malingering?**

known-groups  
simulation  
case study  
cross-sequential  
cross-sectional

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

04-1-53

**Page-Reference:**

120

**Answer:** known-groups

54 **Research has found that feigning psychosis often was associated with diagnosis of what other mental disorder?**

obsessive-compulsive disorder  
hypochondriasis  
antisocial personality disorder  
borderline personality disorder  
bipolar depression

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

04-1-54

**Page-Reference:**

120

**Answer:** borderline personality disorder

55 **What was the major conclusion drawn by Rosenhan (1973) on the research involving the hospitalization of pseudo-patients?**

All pseudo-patients were correctly identified by hospital staff.  
None of the pseudo-patients were correctly identified by hospital staff.  
About half the pseudo-patients were correctly identified by hospital staff.  
Pseudo-patients came to internalize their symptoms to such an extent that their condition progressively worsened during their hospital stay.  
About two-third of the pseudo-patients were correctly identified by hospital staff.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 04-1-55

**Page-Reference:** 121

**Answer:** None of the pseudo-patients were correctly identified by hospital staff.

56 Which of the following is an indicator of malingered psychosis?

report of blunted affect  
reported ability to "make the voices go away"  
reporting negative symptoms of psychosis  
eagerness to discuss delusions  
hallucinations in colour

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 04-1-56

**Page-Reference:** 121-122

**Answer:** eagerness to discuss delusions

57 Which of the following is *not* a cue to malingered psychosis in criminal defendants?

hallucinations with delusions  
understandable motive for committing crime  
absence of subtle signs of psychosis  
presence of a partner in the crime  
visual hallucinations in black and white

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 04-1-5  
7

**Page-  
Reference:** 122

**Answer:** hallucinations with  
delusions

58 **The Structured Interview of Reported Symptoms includes which of the following scales?**

suggestibility  
criminal motivation for offending  
sudden emergence of psychotic symptoms  
blatant symptoms  
compliance symptoms

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 04-1-58

**Page-  
Reference:** 123-124

**Answer:** blatant  
symptoms

59 **Which malingering measure has been extensively validated using both simulation and known-group design studies?**

Structured Interview of Reported Symptoms (SIRS)  
Minnesota Multiphasic Personality Inventory (MMPI)  
Malingering Incident Test (MIT)  
Fictitious Scale Test (FST)  
Symptom Validity Test (SVT)

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:**  
04-1-5  
9

**Page-  
Reference:** 124

**Answer:** Structured Interview of Reported Symptoms  
(SIRS)

60 **What self-report questionnaire has been most widely utilized in studies of malingering by examining validity scales (i.e., faking bad)?**

Structured Interview of Reported Symptoms (SIRS)  
Minnesota Multiphasic Personality Inventory (MMPI-2)  
Trauma Symptom Inventory (TSI-2)  
Test of Memory Malingering (TOMM)  
NEO Five Factor Personality Inventory Revised (NEO-PI-R)

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:**  
04-1-6  
0

**Page-  
Reference:** 124

**Answer:** Minnesota Multiphasic Personality Inventory  
(MMPI-2)

#### Chapter 04 Short Answer Questions

1. **Describe the four phases of a Comparison Question Test (CQT). Make sure you identify the purpose of each phase.**

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 04-2-01

**Page-Reference:** 96-98

**Answer:** - Phase 1: Pretest Interview. Examiner develops comparison questions; learns about the background of the suspect; and the suspect is questioned about the offence.  
- Phase 2: CQT administration. Examiner asks questions while suspect's physiological responses are recorded.  
- Phase 3: CQT scoring. The charts (or test) are numerically scored and summed to give a total score. The examiner looks at the difference between the physiological responses of the comparison and relevant questions.  
- Phase 4: Post-test Interview. The examiner explains the results of the test to the suspect and tells the suspect the outcome. The examiner attempts to get confession if test reveals that the suspect was deceptive.

2. **Provide four criticisms of the Comparison Question Test (CQT).**

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 04-2-02

**Page-Reference:** 96-98, 99-100

**Answer:** a. The CQT does not produce high levels of accuracy and is especially vulnerable to false-positive errors (falsely classifying guilty suspects as innocent).  
b. Results are inadmissible in Canadian courts of law.  
c. The theoretical rationale for the test is weak (i.e., cannot distinguish deception from fear, arousal, and other emotional states triggered in response to relevant and comparison questions).  
d. One can use a variety of countermeasures to "beat" the polygraph test (e.g., biting tongue, counting backwards).  
e. Empirical findings on polygraph validity do not satisfy minimal standards of research quality.

3. **Describe the Concealed Information Test (CIT), including its purpose and general form. Also provide several criticisms or limitations of the CIT and why it isn't used as much as the CQT.**

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 04-2-0  
3

**Page-Reference:** 98-10  
0

**Answer:** The CIT does not assess deception but instead seeks to determine whether the suspect knows details about a crime that only the person who committed the crime would know. The general form of the CIT is a series of questions in multiple-choice format. Each question has one correct option (often called the critical option) and four options that are foils—alternatives that could fit the crime but that are incorrect. A CIT question in the context of a homicide might take the following form: "Did you kill the person with (a) a knife, (b) an axe, (c) a handgun, (d) a crowbar, or (e) a rifle?" The guilty suspect is assumed to display a larger physiological response to the correct option than to the incorrect options. An innocent person, conversely, who does not know the details of the crime, will show the same physiological response to all options. Underlying the CIT is the principle that people will react more strongly to information they recognize as distinctive or important than to unimportant information. Suspects who consistently respond to critical items are assumed to have knowledge of the crime.

Critics of the CIT have warned that this test will work only if the suspect remembers the details of the crime (Honts & Schweinle, 2009). Criminals may not remember specific details from their crimes or may have memory interference from past crimes. Iacono and Patrick (1999) suggested two reasons for the lack of widespread acceptance of the CIT. First, since polygraph examiners believe in the accuracy of the CQT, they are not motivated to use the more difficult-to-construct CIT. Second, for law enforcement to use the CIT, salient features of the crime must be known only to the perpetrator. If details of a crime appear in the media, the crime-related details given cannot be used to construct a CIT.

**4. Describe how event-related brain potentials (ERPs) have been used to detect deception.**

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 04-2-04

**Page-Reference:** 103

**Answer:** Event-related brain potentials (ERPs) are a type of brain-based response that has been investigated for detecting deception. ERPs are measured by placing electrodes on the scalp and by noting changes in electrical patterns related to presentation of a stimulus. ERPs reflect underlying electrical activity in the cerebral cortex. One type of ERP that has shown promise is known as the P300. This ERP occurs in response to significant stimuli that occur infrequently. When using CIT procedures, guilty suspects should respond to such crime-relevant events with a large P300 response, compared with noncrime-relevant events. No difference in P300 responses to crime-relevant and irrelevant events should be observed in innocent suspects. One of the advantages of ERPs is that they have been proposed as a measure resistant to manipulation (Farwell, 2012).

**5. What concern has been raised regarding use of brain-imaging evidence in court? Discuss research that has examined this concern.**

**Difficulty:** Moderate  
**QuestionID:** 04-2-05  
**Page-Reference:** 105

**Answer:** There are also concerns that brain-imaging evidence may have a particularly powerful influence on juror decision making. Simply seeing pictures of brain images makes people believe that scientific results are more valid compared to when other images (such as figures or tables) are presented (McCabe & Castel, 2008). Recently, McCabe, Castel, and Rhodes (2011) examined the influence of evidence from the polygraph, fMRI lie detection, or thermal imaging on verdicts in a mock juror trial. Evidence from fMRI lie detection resulted in more guilty verdicts compared to the other types of evidence presented. However, the researchers found that if expert testimony was included that questioned the validity of fMRI lie detection, the number of guilty verdicts was reduced to a similar level as in the other conditions. There are clearly a number of practical, scientific, and ethical issues that need to be considered before fMRI evidence makes its way into the courtroom.

6. **Provide two verbal and two nonverbal cues (variables) demonstrated to be *reliable* indicators of deception.**

**Difficulty:** Moderate  
**QuestionID:** 04-2-06  
**Page-Reference:** 107-110

**Answer:** - *Verbal:* Cognitively complex lies (lies in which a person must fabricate information) are associated with an increased pitch of voice, increased speech disturbances, slower rate of speech.  
- *Verbal:* Cognitively simpler lies (lies in which you must conceal something or those in which the person is told what to lie about) are associated with fewer speech disturbances and a faster speech rate.  
- *Nonverbal:* nodding, hand movement, leg/foot movement

7. **Give two explanations as to why people are poor at detecting lies.**

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 04-2-07

**Page-Reference:** 110-112

**Answer:** - People rely on cues that have no predictive validity such as gaze aversion and fidgeting.  
- People have a truth-bias (tendency to judge more messages as truthful than deceptive).

**8. According to the text, what are the two key components of malingering? List four reasons why an individual might be motivated to malingering.**

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 04-2-08

**Page-Reference:** 117

**Answer:** - Components of malingering:  
a. Psychological or physical symptoms are clearly under voluntary control.  
b. The production of symptoms is externally motivated.  
- Possible reasons (external motivations):  
a. To avoid punishment by pretending to be unfit to stand trial.  
b. To avoid conscription to military.  
c. To seek financial gain from disability claims, workers' compensation, etc.  
d. To seek drugs/medications.  
e. To be transferred to a psychiatric facility, to escape from prison, or to obtain a more lenient sentence.

**9. Rogers (1990) describes three explanatory models of malingering. Name and define these three models. Which model has been supported by research?**

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 04-2-09

**Page-Reference:** 118-6-117

**Answer:** *a. Pathogenic model:* This assumes that motivation for malingering is due to an underlying mental disorder.  
*b. Criminological model:* Malingering is closely tied with the conjunction of Antisocial Personality Disorder (APD), aversive circumstances and uncooperativeness—i.e., malingering should be suspected if the following are present: (1)

- 10 **Your text identifies several cues of malingered psychosis. Identify three cues associated with suspicious hallucinations and three cues associated with suspicious delusions.**

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:** 04-2-10

**Page-Reference:** 121-123

**Answer:** *a. Suspicious hallucinations:*

- continuous rather than intermittent
- vague or inaudible
- inability to describe strategies to diminish voices
- claiming all commands are obeyed
- visual hallucinations in black and white

*b. Suspicious delusions:*

- abrupt onset or termination
- eagerness to discuss
- conduct inconsistent with delusions
- elaborate delusions lacking in paranoid, grandiose, or religious themes

- 11 **What are the eight strategies that a person may employ when malingering identified by the Structured Interview of Reported Symptoms (SIRS)?**

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:** 04-2-11

**Page-Reference:** 123-124

- Answer:**
- 1) Rare symptoms: symptoms that true patients endorse very infrequently
  - 2) Symptom combinations: uncommon pairings of symptoms
  - 3) Improbable or absurd symptoms: symptoms unlikely to be true, since true patients rarely endorsed them
  - 4) Blatant symptoms: items that are obvious signs of mental disorder
  - 5) Subtle symptoms: items that contain what most people consider everyday problems
  - 6) Selectivity of symptoms: ratio of symptoms endorsed versus those not endorsed
  - 7) Severity of symptoms: number of severe symptoms reported
  - 8) Reported versus observed symptoms: discrepancy between self-report and observable symptoms



**Chapter 05: Eyewitness  
Testimony**

**Chapter 05 Multiple Choice  
Questions**

1. A witness who describes the actions of a culprit relies on \_\_\_\_\_, while a witness who identifies the culprit's voice from a set of voices relies on \_\_\_\_\_.

narrative memory, refreshed memory  
recall memory, recognition memory  
natural memory, prompted memory  
open-ended memory, direct question memory  
verbal cues, non-verbal cues

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

05-1-01

**Page-  
Reference:**

129

**Answer:** recall memory, recognition  
memory

2. A witness who is testifying about what she remembers during a convenience store robbery is using what type of memory?

repressed memory  
recognition memory  
recall memory  
refreshed memory  
reinstated memory

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:** 05-1-02

**Page-Reference:** 129

**Answer:** recall memory

3. **A witness is on the stand and says "that's the man who did it" as she points to the defendant. What type of memory is she using when making this judgment?**

repressed memory  
recognition memory  
recall memory  
refreshed memory  
reinstated memory

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 05-1-03

**Page-Reference:** 129

**Answer:** recognition memory

4. **Which of the following is *not* one of the legislative changes proposed in the Safer Witnesses Act in 2012?**

Making it easier for witnesses in provincial programs to obtain new identities.  
Increasing the amount of time emergency protection may be provided to witnesses.  
Making the program available to members referred from National Defence and CSIS.  
Imposing new restrictions on the disclosure of information to make the program more secure.  
Implementation of more rigorous screening and personality testing procedures to assure selection of suitable candidates.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 05-1-04

**Page-Reference:** 129

**Answer:** Implementation of more rigorous screening and personality testing procedures to assure selection of suitable candidates.

**5. What is the most common research method for studying eyewitness issues?**

- field study
- archival research
- laboratory simulation study
- recall study
- recognition study

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 05-1-05

**Page-Reference:** 130

**Answer:** laboratory simulation study

**6. Which of the following is an estimator variable in eyewitness research?**

- How light it was outside when the crime was witnessed.
- The room where the witness was interviewed.
- The number of police officers present during the interview.
- The time of day when the witness was interviewed.
- The type of lineup presented to the witness.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 05-1-06

**Page-Reference:** 130

**Answer:** How light it was outside when the crime was

**7. Which of the following is a system variable in eyewitness research?**

- Whether the witness is intoxicated at the time of the offence.
- The age of the witness.
- The type of weapon used by the culprit.
- The interview procedure used by the police officer.
- The time at which the crime was committed.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 05-1-07

**Page-Reference:** 130

**Answer:** The interview procedure used by the police officer.

**8. Dr. Sander wants to conduct an experiment to examine whether memory is better for events that are witnessed versus events one is directly involved in (i.e., the victim). He sets up a staged event where participants arrive in groups of three to his study (one is a confederate), are asked to take out their wallets to show their photo ID, followed by the confederate who steals one participant's wallet and runs off down the hall. Both participants (the witness and the victim) are questioned by campus security separately about what happened, and asked to identify the suspect out of a photo lineup. In this example, the independent variable is:**

- what the confederate stole from the participant.
- whether the memory is reported by a victim or a witness.
- how the participants were interviewed about the "crime".
- whether there were differences in correct or false identifications.
- how much information the participants reported.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 05-1-08

**Page-Reference:** 130

**Answer:** whether the memory is reported by a victim or a witness.

9. **Dr. Sander wants to conduct an experiment to examine whether memory is better for events that are witnessed versus events one is directly involved in. He sets up a staged event where participants arrive in groups of three to his study (one is a confederate), are asked to take out their wallets to show their photo ID, followed by the confederate who steals one participant's wallet and runs off down the hall. Both participants (the witness and the victim) are questioned by campus security separately about what happened, and asked to identify the suspect out of a photo lineup. In this example, the dependent variable is:**

what the confederate stole from the participant.  
whether the memory is reported by a victim or a witness.  
how the participants were interviewed about the "crime".  
whether there were differences in correct or false identifications.  
how much information the participants reported.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 05-1-0  
9

**Page-Reference:** 128-12  
9

**Answer:** whether there were differences in correct or false identifications.

- 10 **What has *not* been identified as a limitation of the standard police interview?**

asking brief, direct questions  
mixing visual and auditory questions  
asking questions in a random order  
asking very broad questions  
frequent interruptions

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 05-1-10

**Page-Reference:** 131-132

**Answer:** asking very broad questions

11 \_\_\_\_\_ is a phenomenon produced when what one witness says about a crime can affect what another witness will say, if those witnesses communicate with one another or come to learn what the other has reported.

- The misinformation effect
- The instructional bias
- Memory conformity
- Refreshed memory
- The distractor bias

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

05-1-11

**Page-Reference:**

132

**Answer:** Memory conformity

12 What is another term for the misinformation effect?

- post-event information effect
- free narrative effect
- direct question recall
- open-ended recall
- closed ended recall effect

**Difficulty:**

Easy

**QuestionID:**

05-1-12

**Page-Reference:**

133

**Answer:** post-event information effect

13 According to Kebbell and Wagstaff (1998), \_\_\_\_\_ and \_\_\_\_\_ are used often in hypnosis?

confabulation, suppression  
compliance, social proof  
age regression, television technique  
focused meditation, staring  
role playing, clock watching

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 05-1-13

**Page-Reference:** 131-132

**Answer:** age regression, television technique

- 14 The belief that the misinformation effect results from instances where the original memory is replaced with a new, incorrect memory is referred to as:

the encoding rejection hypothesis  
the source misattribution hypothesis  
the memory impairment hypothesis  
the misinformation acceptance hypothesis  
the reconstructive memory hypothesis

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 05-1-14

**Page-Reference:** 134

**Answer:** the memory impairment hypothesis

- 15 The belief that the misinformation effect results from a confusion between the accurate original memory and the inaccurate memory (as they can remember both but can't remember where each memory came from) is referred to as:

the encoding rejection hypothesis  
the source misattribution hypothesis  
the memory impairment hypothesis  
the misinformation acceptance hypothesis  
the reconstructive memory hypothesis

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 05-1-15

**Page-Reference:** 134

**Answer:** the source misattribution hypothesis

- 16 **Officer Newton has interviewed multiple witnesses in the same day in an ongoing murder investigation with multiple perpetrators. Witness 2 told him that one perpetrator had a scar on the left side of his face, yet in reality there was no scar on any of the suspects. When interviewing Witness 5 later, Officer Newton asks "was the perpetrator with the scar carrying a weapon?" The manner in which Officer Newton is questioning the witnesses demonstrates:**

the cognitive interview technique  
recognition memory  
context reinstatement  
the post-event information effect  
memory conformity

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 05-1-16

**Page-Reference:** 134

**Answer:** the post-event information effect

- 17 **Which of the following statements is *not* correct concerning the outcome of hypnosis?**

More information is recalled.  
Participants report relatively more accurate information and less inaccurate information.  
Participants express a high degree of confidence in their memory reports.  
It is not possible to determine which statements are erroneous and which are correct.  
Reinstating context, recalling, recognizing, and forgetting.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 05-1-17

**Page-Reference:** 134-135

**Answer:** Participants report relatively more accurate information and less inaccurate information.

18 **What are the original four memory-retrieval techniques contained within the cognitive interview?**

reinstating context, reporting everything, reversing order, and changing perspective  
reinstating context, recalling, recognizing, and answering questions  
encoding, short-term memory, long-term memory, and retrieving  
encoding, storing, retrieving, and forgetting  
reinstating context, recalling, recognizing, and forgetting

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 05-1-18

**Page-Reference:** 135

**Answer:** reinstating context, reporting everything, reversing order, and changing perspective

19 **Which of the following statements is true with respect to the cognitive interview and enhanced cognitive interview?**

The enhanced cognitive interview incorporates all the elements of the cognitive interview.  
Only some officers in Canada have been trained to use the cognitive interview.  
No significant differences have been found between the effectiveness of the cognitive interview and that of the enhanced cognitive interview.  
Compared to the standard police interview, the cognitive interview and enhanced cognitive interview produce more accurate information without an increase in inaccurate information.  
All of the above.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 05-1-19

**Page-Reference:** 136-137

**Answer:** All of the above.

20 Which component is *not* part of the enhanced cognitive interview?

rapport building  
transfer of control  
focused retrieval  
direct questioning  
witness-compatible questioning

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 05-1-20

**Page-Reference:** 136-137

**Answer:** direct questioning

21 Which two items did Lindsay, Martin, and Webber (1994) find that were commonly reported by witnesses?

gender and age  
height and weight  
hair and clothing  
race and age  
gender and clothing

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 05-1-21

**Page-Reference:** 137-138

**Answer:** hair and clothing

22 **Sauerland and Sporer's (2011) examination of the effect of recall modality on memory performance revealed that:**

modality did not play a significant role in recall.  
asking witnesses to write out their descriptions produced shorter and less accurate descriptions than when witnesses orally stated their descriptions.  
asking witnesses to write out their descriptions produced longer and more accurate descriptions than when witnesses orally stated their descriptions.  
asking witnesses to write out their descriptions produced shorter but more accurate descriptions than when witnesses orally stated their descriptions.  
witnesses tend to get annoyed with interviewers who take notes.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 05-1-22

**Page-Reference:** 139

**Answer:** asking witnesses to write out their descriptions produced shorter and less accurate descriptions than when witnesses orally stated their descriptions.

23 **What is the difference between a *suspect* and a *perpetrator*?**

The terms *suspect* and *perpetrator* can be used interchangeably; they mean the same thing.

A suspect is innocent and a perpetrator is guilty.

A suspect is guilty and a perpetrator is innocent.

A suspect can be guilty or innocent whereas a perpetrator is guilty.

A suspect is innocent and a perpetrator can be innocent or guilty.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 05-1-2  
3

**Page-Reference:** 139

**Answer:** A suspect can be guilty or innocent whereas a perpetrator is guilty.

24 A \_\_\_\_\_ strategy matches lineup members to the suspect's appearance.

similarity-to-witness  
differential scaling  
foil-to-foil  
distractor-to-foil  
similarity-to-suspect

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 05-1-24

**Page-Reference:** 139

**Answer:** similarity-to-suspect

25 What type of decision is *not* possible with a target-present lineup?

correct identification  
foil identification  
false rejection  
false identification  
All of the above are possible identification decisions with the target-present lineup.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:**  
05-1-2  
5

**Page-Reference:** 140-14  
1

**Answer:** false  
identification

- 26 **An eyewitness is exposed to a target-present lineup and identifies someone from the lineup that the police know *did not* commit the crime. What sort of decision has this eyewitness just made?**

a correct identification  
a false rejection  
a foil identification  
a correct rejection  
a true identification

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:**  
05-1-2  
6

**Page-Reference:** 141

**Answer:** a foil  
identification

- 27 **Youssef has just viewed a target-absent lineup, but he identified an innocent suspect as the perpetrator. This eyewitness just made a:**

correct identification  
false rejection  
foil identification  
correct rejection  
false identification

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:**  
05-1-2  
7

**Page-  
Reference:** 141

**Answer:** false  
identification

28 In target-absent lineups, both false identifications and foil identifications can be referred to as:

true positives  
false positives  
true negatives  
false negatives  
true and false negatives

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:**  
05-1-2  
8

**Page-  
Reference:** 138

**Answer:** false  
positives

29 What is *not* an advantage of using a photo array rather than a live lineup for eyewitness identification?

Photo arrays are easier to construct than live lineups.  
Suspect does not have the right to counsel being present with a photo array, whereas he/she does have that right with a live lineup.  
Photo arrays produce higher identification accuracy than live lineups.  
A suspect need not be informed that he/she is being placed in a photo array, whereas with a live lineup he/she must be so informed.  
The police do not have to worry about the suspect's behaviour potentially invalidating the lineup.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 05-1-29

**Page-Reference:** 141

**Answer:** Photo arrays produce higher identification accuracy than live lineups.

- 30 **According to the text, when an eyewitness simultaneously compares lineup members to one another and then makes a decision based on who they believe looks most like the perpetrator, they are making a:**

an absolute judgment  
false judgment  
relative judgment  
correct acceptance  
foil identification

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 05-1-30

**Page-Reference:** 142

**Answer:** relative judgment

- 31 **What is the critical difference between a simultaneous lineup and a sequential lineup?**

Sequential lineups typically involve biased instructions.  
Sequential lineups require absolute judgments.  
Simultaneous lineups require absolute judgments.  
Simultaneous lineups typically include more foils.  
Sequential lineups require relative judgments.

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 05-1-3  
1

**Page-Reference:** 142

**Answer:** Sequential lineups require absolute judgments.

- 32 **An eyewitness is shown a picture of an individual who the police think is responsible for a recent bank robbery. No other lineup photos are shown. The eyewitness is asked to state whether the person in the photograph is the same individual seen in the bank. What sort of lineup procedure is being used here?**

a showup  
a simultaneous lineup  
a sequential lineup  
a walk-by  
an elimination lineup

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 05-1-3  
2

**Page-Reference:** 144

**Answer:** a showup

- 33 **According to the text, which lineup procedure is considered most suggestive and is reserved only for certain extenuating circumstances?**

a showup  
a simultaneous lineup  
a sequential lineup  
a walk-by  
an elimination lineup

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 05-1-3  
3

**Page-Reference:** 144

**Answer:** a  
showup

- 34 Alice was stabbed multiple times and is in critical condition in the hospital. The police detained a suspect leaving from the scene of the crime, and take the suspect to the hospital to see if Alice can identify him as the man who stabbed her. The police also are concerned that Alice might not make it through the night and want to get an ID as soon as possible. What type of lineup procedure is being used here?

a simultaneous lineup  
a sequential lineup  
a showup  
a walk-by  
an elimination lineup

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 05-1-34

**Page-Reference:** 144

**Answer:** a  
showup

- 35 Recent research by Megreya, Bindemann, Harvard, and Burton (2012) has found that the placement of a suspect's photo in an array has an impact on identification. In particular, they found that:

suspects are more accurately identified when they are presented on the left side of an array.  
foils on the left side were more likely to be inaccurately identified as the perpetrator.  
placing the suspect's photo within the first two photos increases the chances that the witness will select the suspect.  
both suspects and foils are more likely to be identified when they are on the right side of an array.  
suspects are least likely to be identified if their photos are placed near the end of an array.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 05-1-3  
5

**Page-Reference:** 145

**Answer:** foils on the left side were more likely to be inaccurately identified as the perpetrator.

36 **What typically happens when the eyewitness is told that the perpetrator may or may not be present in the lineup?**

false positive identifications increase  
false positive identifications decrease  
correct identifications increase  
correct identifications decrease  
these instructions have no impact on identifications

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 05-1-3  
6

**Page-Reference:** 145

**Answer:** false positive identifications decrease

37 **A(n) \_\_\_\_\_ identification procedure takes place in a naturalistic environment.**

showup  
simultaneous lineup  
sequential lineup  
walk-by  
elimination lineup

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 05-1-3  
7

**Page-Reference:** 145

**Answer:** walk-by

- 38 **Julianne was attacked by a man that she described as short, blond, and wearing a black hoodie. She is asked to come to the police station for an identification lineup, and the officer tells her the perpetrator may or may not be in the lineup. When she looks at the lineup members, she identifies #3 as the perpetrator as he has blond hair and all the other members of the lineup have dark brown or black hair. A \_\_\_\_\_ bias is present in this lineup.**

suspect  
foil  
clothing  
instruction  
facial

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 05-1-38

**Page-Reference:** 145

**Answer:** foil

- 39 **A perpetrator has been described as a tall male, wearing glasses and a red toque. The police officer makes sure that all members of the lineup also are wearing glasses and toques. The officer is trying to avoid a \_\_\_\_\_ bias.**

suspect  
foil  
clothing  
instruction  
facial

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 05-1-3  
9

**Page-  
Reference:** 145

**Answer:**  
clothing

40 **What type of lineup was used by Charles Lindberg to identify Bruno Hauptmann, the man who kidnapped and murdered his infant son?**

clothing  
voice  
face  
body  
none of the above

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 05-1-4  
0

**Page-  
Reference:** 145-14  
6

**Answer:**  
voice

41 **Which of the following factors has been reported to increase correct identification in a voice lineup?**

increasing the number of foils in the lineup  
presenting the target voice later in the lineup  
increasing the length of the voice samples  
ensuring that the voice does not have an accent unfamiliar to the witness  
increasing the length of the voice samples and ensuring that the voice does not have an accent unfamiliar to the witness

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 05-1-4  
1

**Page-Reference:** 146

**Answer:** increasing the length of the voice samples and ensuring that the voice does not have an accent unfamiliar to the witness

42 **According to the textbook, what is the primary issue surrounding the *Neil v. Biggers* (1972) case in relation to eyewitness accuracy?**

The fact that the court stated that confidence of the witness should be seen as an indicator of accuracy.

The fact that the witness was hypnotized and thus the information provided should not be admissible as accurate evidence in the trial.

The fact that the witness was given a simultaneous rather than a sequential lineup.

The fact that the witness was a child and thus the accuracy of her judgment was questionable.

The fact that eyewitness researchers should not be allowed to testify in court.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 05-1-42

**Page-Reference:** 147-148

**Answer:** The fact that the court stated that confidence of the witness should be seen as an indicator of accuracy.

43 **Overall, there is \_\_\_\_\_ between the accuracy and the confidence of an eyewitness in the identification of a perpetrator.**

a large positive correlation  
a small positive correlation  
no correlation  
a small negative correlation  
a large negative correlation

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:**  
05-1-4  
3

**Page-  
Reference:** 147

**Answer:** a small positive  
correlation

44 **When presented with a target-absent lineup, older adults (over 60 years of age) tend to make \_\_\_\_\_ correct identifications and \_\_\_\_\_ correct rejections compared to younger adults.**

fewer/more  
more/fewer  
a similar number of/fewer  
fewer/a similar number of  
a similar number of/more

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:**  
05-1-4  
4

**Page-  
Reference:** 149-15  
0

**Answer:** a similar number of/  
fewer

45 **Which of the following is true regarding age and eyewitness identification?**

Older adults are just as likely as younger adults to make a false positive decision from a target-absent lineup.

Generally, there are significant differences between younger and older adults' ability to make correct identifications.

Younger and older eyewitnesses do not differ in their correct identification rate or false positive rate.

Overall, older adult eyewitnesses have more difficulty than younger adult eyewitnesses in making correct rejection decisions.

In broad terms younger adults have more difficulty than older people in making correct rejection decisions.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 05-1-4  
5

**Page-Reference:** 150

**Answer:** Overall, older adult eyewitnesses have more difficulty than younger adult eyewitnesses in making correct rejection decisions.

46 The \_\_\_\_\_ hypothesis explains the cross-race effect in eyewitness testimony by suggesting that the more contact you have with other races the better you will be able to identify them.

interracial contact  
cue-utilization  
unusualness  
prejudice  
physiognomic homogeneity

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 05-1-4  
6

**Page-Reference:** 151

**Answer:** interracial  
contact

47 When the perpetrator is the same race as the witness, this tends to lead to:

lower false positives and higher true negatives relative to other-race identifications.  
higher false identifications and lower correct rejections than other-race identifications.  
higher foil identifications and higher false negatives than other-race identifications.  
lower false identifications as well as lower true positives relative to other-race identifications.  
higher correct identifications and lower false positives than other-race identifications.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 05-1-4  
7

**Page-Reference:** 150-15  
1

**Answer:** higher correct identifications and lower false positives than other-race identifications.

48 Which of the following explanations for the cross-race effect is most supported by empirical research?

the prejudice hypothesis  
the cue-utilization hypothesis  
the unusualness hypothesis  
the interracial contact hypothesis  
the physiognomic homogeneity hypothesis

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 05-1-48

**Page-Reference:** 151

**Answer:** the interracial contact hypothesis

49 Susan is being interviewed by a police officer after she witnessed a man rob a convenience store. The police are asking her questions about the perpetrator's appearance, and she finds that all she can remember is that the man had a gun. What is the term used to describe this recall situation?

recall obstruction hypothesis  
retrieval impairment hypothesis  
weapon focus effect  
central superiority hypothesis  
peripheral inferiority effect

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 05-1-4  
9

**Page-  
Reference:** 151

**Answer:** weapon focus  
effect

- 50 **Kirk was recently robbed at gunpoint while working at gas station. Although he could not recall many details about the perpetrator, he was able to recall many details about the gun. Kirk's recall performance can best be explained by:**

the bland nature of the offence  
his expert memory  
his extensive experience interacting with people  
the unusualness of the weapon being present  
the fact that guns are better recalled than other weapons

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 05-1-50

**Page-  
Reference:** 152

**Answer:** the unusualness of the weapon being  
present

- 51 **Approximately \_\_\_\_\_ % of wrongful conviction cases (exonerated through DNA evidence) have been attributed to eyewitness identification?**

10-20  
25  
50  
75  
95

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 05-1-5  
1

**Page-Reference:** 154

**Answer:**  
75

52 Which Canadian case involving poor police techniques in collecting eyewitness evidence resulted in a set of recommendations for conducting lineup identifications?

*Neil v. Biggers*  
*R. v. Sophonow*  
*R. v. Brooks*  
*R. v. Reno*  
*R. v. Henderson*

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 05-1-52

**Page-Reference:** 156-157

**Answer:** *R. v. Sophonow*

53 All of the following are recommendations made during the Sophonow inquiry concerning proper lineup procedures, except:

Officers should not discuss a witness's identification decision with him or her.  
Officers should inform witnesses that it is just as important to clear innocent suspects as it is to identify guilty suspects.  
The photo lineup procedure with the witness should be videotaped or audiotaped.  
All photo and in-person lineups should be timed, as witnesses who are accurate should be able to identify the perpetrator immediately.  
The photo lineup should be presented sequentially.

**Difficulty:** Moderate  
**QuestionID:** 05-1-53  
**Page-Reference:** 156

**Answer:** All photo and in-person lineups should be timed, as witnesses who are accurate should be able to identify the perpetrator immediately.

## Chapter 05 Short Answer Questions

1. **Distinguish between a system variable and an estimator variable as related to eyewitness research. Provide one example of each.**

**Difficulty:** Easy  
**QuestionID:** 05-2-01  
**Page-Reference:** 130

**Answer:** - *Estimator variable*: a factor that can affect the accuracy of eyewitness testimony that is present at the time of the crime; a factor which is *not* under the control of the criminal justice system (e.g., witness age, race, eyesight, etc.; distance between witness and event; time of day the event occurred, etc.)  
- *System variable*: a factor that can influence the accuracy of eyewitness testimony, which is under the control of the criminal justice system and can be manipulated after the fact (e.g., interview style, police officer gender, location of interview, lineup procedure, etc.)

**Difficulty:** Moderate  
**QuestionID:** 05-2-02  
**Page-Reference:** 130-131

**Answer:** Recall of the crime or the perpetrator can take two formats. With **open-ended recall**, also known as a **free narrative**, witnesses are asked to either write or orally state all they remember about the event without the officer (or experimenter) asking questions. With this type of recall, the witness also may be asked to describe the perpetrator. With **direct question recall**, witnesses are asked a series of specific questions about the crime or the perpetrator.

A witness's recall of the crime or the perpetrator can be examined for the following: (1) *The amount of information reported.* How many descriptors of the crime do witnesses report? How many descriptors of the perpetrator do witnesses report?

(2) *The type of information reported.* What is the proportion of peripheral details versus central details? What is the proportion of perpetrator details versus environment details?

(3) *The accuracy of information reported.* What is the proportion of correct descriptors reported? What is the proportion of omission errors (information the witness failed to report)? What is the proportion of commission errors (details falsely reported to be present)?

As for the recognition of the perpetrator, the typical recognition task is a lineup. A perpetrator **lineup** is a set of people presented to the witness, who in turn must identify the perpetrator if he or she is present.

A witness's recognition response can be examined for the following: (1) *Accuracy of decision.* What is the rate of correctly identifying the perpetrator in the lineup? What is the rate of correctly stating that the perpetrator is not present in the lineup. (2) *Types of errors made.* What is the rate of identifying an innocent person? What is the rate of stating that the perpetrator is not present when he or she is actually in the lineup.

3. **Define the misinformation effect within the context of eyewitness research. In addition, fully describe the three most common explanations for this effect.**

**Difficulty:** Moderate  
**QuestionID:** 05-2-03  
**Page-Reference:** 132-134

**Answer:** - The *misinformation effect* refers to the fact that providing misleading information in the retention interval (between witnessing an event and recalling an event) can decrease our ability to recall memories correctly (i.e., this misleading information may be incorporated into a subsequent recall task).

- Explanations for misinformation effect:

a. *Memory impairment hypothesis:* An individual's memories of the event details have truly been changed and therefore he/she incorrectly recalls the misleading information (i.e., the original information has been replaced, written over, displaced, etc. by the new misleading information).

4. **State two difficulties with the use of hypnosis in the eyewitness context.**

**Difficulty:** Moderate  
**QuestionID:** 05-2-04  
**Page-Reference:** 134-135

**Answer:** - Individuals who are hypnotized recall more information but it is not possible to discern which information is correct and which information is incorrect.  
- Individuals who are hypnotized recall both accurate and inaccurate details with the same degree of confidence.

5. **In general terms, how does the enhanced cognitive interview differ from the original cognitive interview? Name and define three of the five techniques specific to the enhanced cognitive interview.**

**Difficulty:** Moderate  
**QuestionID:** 05-2-05  
**Page-Reference:** 136-137

**Answer:** - The enhanced cognitive interview includes all the memory retrieval techniques recommended for use in the cognitive interview, but in addition, the *enhanced cognitive interview also includes various principles of social dynamics*.

- Techniques specific to the enhanced cognitive interview:

*a. Rapport building:* The officer should spend time building rapport with the witness, making sure they are comfortable, feel at ease, etc.

*b. Supportive interviewer behaviour:* The officer should not interrupt the free recall process and should be attentive to what the witness is saying.

*c. Transfer of control:* The witness should be the one to control the flow of the interview.

*d. Focused retrieval:* As much as possible, questions should be open-ended, non-leading, and non-suggestive.

*e. Witness-compatible questioning:* The officer's questions should match the witness's line of thought (i.e., if the witness is talking about the culprit's appearance, the officer's questions should match this topic).

6. **List the correct decisions associated with both target-present and target-absent lineups. Also, list the potential errors that can be made in the lineup identification process and whether these errors are known or unknown to the police.**

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 05-2-0  
6

**Page-Reference:** 140-14  
1

**Answer:** - *Target-present lineup*: The correct decision is a correct identification.  
- *Target-absent lineup*: The correct decision is a correct rejection.  
- The potential errors associated with the lineup identification process include:  
a. Foil identification (known error to police) with a target-present or target-absent lineup  
b. False rejection (unknown error) with a target-present lineup  
c. False identification (unknown error) with a target-absent lineup

**7. List the five reasons why photo lineups are more common than live lineups.**

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 05-2-07

**Page-Reference:** 141

**Answer:** - They are less time-consuming to construct. The police can choose foils from their mug shot (pictures of people who have been charged with crimes in the past) files rather than find live persons.  
- They are portable. The police are able to bring the photo array to the witness rather than have the witness go to the police department.  
- The suspect does not have the right to counsel being present when a witness looks at a photo array. This right is present with live lineups.  
- Because photos are static, the police need not worry that the suspect's behaviour may draw attention to himself or herself, thus invalidating the photo array.  
- A witness may be less anxious examining a photo array than a live lineup.

**8. Distinguish between a simultaneous and a sequential lineup.**

**Difficulty:**

**QuestionID:** 05-2-08

**Page-Reference:** 142

**Answer:** - *Simultaneous lineup*: The witness is presented with all lineup members at the same time; this involves a relative judgment (i.e., lineup members are compared to each other and the one that looks most like the culprit may be identified).

- *Sequential lineup*: The lineup members are presented to the witness serially. The witness must make a final decision on whether a given lineup member is the culprit before being presented with any other lineup member; this involves an absolute judgment (i.e., each lineup member is compared to the witness's memory of the culprit and then a decision is made as to whether the particular lineup member is indeed the culprit).

9. **Describe the three major types of biases that have been found to increase false positives in lineup identifications.**

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 05-2-09

**Page-Reference:** 145

**Answer: 1) Foil bias.** The suspect is the only lineup member who matches the description of the perpetrator. For example, the suspect has a beard and moustache while the other lineup members are clean-shaven (Lindsay, Lea, & Fulford, 1991).

**2) Clothing bias.** The suspect is the only lineup member wearing similar clothing to that worn by the perpetrator. For example, the perpetrator was described as wearing a blue baseball cap. The suspect is wearing a blue baseball cap while the foils are not (Dysart, Lindsay, & Dupuis, 2006; Lindsay et al., 1991; Lindsay, Wallbridge, & Drennan, 1987).

**3) Instruction bias.** The police fail to mention to the witness that the perpetrator may not be present; rather, the police imply that the perpetrator is present and that the witness should pick him or her out (Malpass & Devine, 1981; Steblay, 1997; Clark, 2005).

10 **What is the cross-race effect? Describe the three common explanations as to why the cross-race effect occurs.**

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 05-2-10

**Page-Reference:** 150-151

**Answer:** The **cross-race effect**, also known as the **other-race effect** and the **own-race bias**, is the phenomenon of witnesses remembering faces of people of their own race with greater accuracy than they remember faces of people of other races.

1) **Attitudes** One hypothesis to explain the other-race effect is based on attitudes. More specifically, people with less prejudicial attitudes may be more inclined to distinguish among members of other races. However, research to date does not support this explanation (Platz & Hosch, 1988; Slone, Brigham, & Meissner, 2000).

2) **Physiognomic Homogeneity** An alternative hypothesis to explain the other-race effect suggests that some races have less variability in their faces—that is, "they all look alike." This hypothesis has not received much empirical support either.

3) **Interracial Contact** Perhaps the hypothesis receiving the most attention examines the amount or type of contact people have had with other races. This hypothesis states that the more contact you have with other races, the better you will be able to identify them.

11 **Distinguish between the cue-utilization hypothesis and the unusualness hypothesis as explanations for the weapon focus effect.**

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

05-2-11

**Page-**

**Reference:**

151-152

**Answer:** The **cue-utilization hypothesis** was proposed by Easterbrook (1959) to explain why a witness may focus on the weapon rather than other details. The hypothesis suggests that when emotional arousal increases, attentional capacity decreases. With limited attentional capacity, central details, such as the weapon, are more likely to be encoded than are peripheral details, such as the colour of the perpetrator's hair. There is limited support for this hypothesis.

An alternative explanation for the weapon focus phenomenon has to do with unusualness, in that weapons are unusual and thus attract a witness's attention. Because a witness is not paying attention to and encoding other details, these other details are not remembered (Mitchell, Livosky, & Mather, 1998; Pickel, 1998). To follow this line of thinking, you would predict that not only weapons, but also other objects might produce a "weapon focus" effect, if they were unusual for the situation. Thus, there is support for the unusualness explanation for the weapon focus effect but it can be reversed depending on other "unusual" factors.

12 **On the basis of the research you have read in the textbook, list five recommendations that you would make to police forces regarding how they should conduct police lineups.**

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:** 05-2-12

**Page-Reference:** 155-156

- Answer:** - The lineup administrator should not know who is the suspect (i.e., he/she should be blind to who is the suspect).
- The witness should be told that the culprit may not be present in the lineup.
  - Lineup members (fillers, foils) should fit the description of the culprit provided by the witness and the suspect should not stand out as distinctive from the others.
  - The entire lineup procedure should be videotaped.
  - A statement should be taken regarding the confidence level of the eyewitness at the time of the identification and prior to the potential delivery of any feedback.
  - Officers should inform witnesses that it is just as important to clear innocent suspects as it is to identify guilty suspects.
  - Officers should not discuss a witness identification decision with the witness.

**Chapter 06: Child Victims and Witnesses**

**Chapter 06 Multiple Choice Questions**

1. Which of the following was *not* listed in the text as a contributing factor to the renewed interest in research on child witnesses in the 1970s?

Expert psychological testimony was becoming more acceptable in the courtroom.  
Social scientists were interested in research that could be applied to real-world problems.  
There was increased interest by social scientists in applied research.  
There was increase in adult eyewitness research.  
There was a decrease in the amount of historical sexual and physical abuse cases.

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

06-1-01

**Page-Reference:**

162

**Answer:** There was a decrease in the amount of historical sexual and physical abuse cases.

2. Research suggests that the accuracy of children's reporting is highly dependent on:

how they are asked to report.  
what they are asked to report.  
who interviews them.  
where they are interviewed.  
what time of day they are interviewed.

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:** 06-1-02

**Page-Reference:** 162-163

**Answer:** how they are asked to report.

3. **In the context of an interview with a child in which abuse is suspected, a question such as, "Did the man touch you?" is an example of a(n):**

ambiguous question  
suggestive question  
direct yes/no question  
open-ended question  
prejudicial question

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 06-1-03

**Page-Reference:** 166

**Answer:** direct yes/no question

4. **When questions are unanswerable, children are more likely to say "I don't know" to which type of question?**

leading questions  
forced-choice questions  
directive (*wh-*) questions  
direct yes/no questions  
open-ended questions

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 06-1-04

**Page-Reference:** 166

**Answer:** directive (*wh-*) questions

5. **Recent research by Lyon, Scurich, Choi, Handmaker, and Blank (2012) examining child sexual abuse transcripts reported what type of question leads to the most evaluative information elicited?**

option-posing questions  
wh-questions  
forced choice questions  
how-questions  
suggestive questions

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 06-1-05

**Page-Reference:** 166

**Answer:** how-questions

6. **The theory that explains children's suggestibility by exploring the social characteristics of the interview process itself is called:**

cognitive influence  
social domination  
social compliance  
social suggestibility  
adult compliance

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 06-1-06

**Page-Reference:** 166-167

**Answer:** social compliance

7. Which of the following terms refers to when children report an event that they heard about as if it were something they had experienced?

- misattribution
- compliance
- cooperation
- suggestibility
- encoding specificity

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 06-1-07

**Page-Reference:** 167

**Answer:**  
misattribution

8. In your text, some problems have been identified with respect to use of anatomically detailed dolls to diagnose child sexual abuse. One of these problems is that:

research conducted on the use of anatomically detailed dolls is conclusive in the finding that children given these props consistently provide more inaccurate details than those children who are not given the dolls.

many young children have difficulty correctly recognizing and identifying the anatomy of the dolls. while a scoring procedure has been developed to score a child's interaction with the doll, this procedure has not been subject to much empirical testing.

there is no standardization for what dolls should look like.

the use of the dolls has not undergone sufficient empirical study.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 06-1-08

**Page-Reference:** 168-169

**Answer:** there is no standardization for what dolls should look like.

9. According to research, should anatomically detailed dolls be used?

- No, because they are no different than verbal interviews.
- Yes, because they elicit accurate reports of sexual abuse.
- No, because scoring and manufacturing is not standardized.
- Yes, because research has shown that abused kids play with the dolls differently than non-abused kids.
- No, because kids like to play with dolls regardless of whether or not they have been abused.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 06-1-09

**Page-Reference:** 168-169

**Answer:** No, because scoring and manufacturing is not standardized.

10. Criterion-Based Content Analysis (CBCA) is part of which more comprehensive protocol?

- Step-wise interview
- Narrative elaboration
- Cognitive interview
- Statement validity analysis
- National Institute of Child Health and Human Development Interview protocol

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 06-1-10

**Page-Reference:** 169

**Answer:** Statement validity analysis

11. What is the underlying assumption of the Criterion-Based Content Analysis (CBCA)?

Descriptions of real events differ in quality and content from memories that are fabricated.

Children are likely to lie when interviewed by an adult.

Pressure techniques aid at distinguishing truth from lies.

Non-verbal actions allow an interviewer to distinguish truthful reports.

*Wh*-questions aid at distinguishing truth from lies.

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 06-1-1  
1

**Page-Reference:** 170

**Answer:** Descriptions of real events differ in quality and content from memories that are fabricated.

12 Which of the following is not one of the CBCA criterion listed in the text?

spontaneous corrections or additions  
unusual details  
contextual embedding  
suggestive questioning  
unstructured production

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 06-1-12

**Page-Reference:** 170

**Answer:** suggestive questioning

13 Which of the following CBCA criterion listed in your text refers to an assessment of whether the account is consistently organized?

spontaneous corrections or additions  
logical structure  
contextual embedding  
interaction details  
unstructured production

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 06-1-13

**Page-Reference:** 170

**Answer:** unstructured production

- 14 **Select the correct order of the following "steps" employed in the Step-Wise Interview:**

rapport building, explaining truth, general questions, free narrative  
explaining truth, rapport building, general questions, free narrative  
explaining truth, free narrative, general questions, recall of non-abuse events  
explaining truth, rapport building, free narrative, general questions  
rapport building, explaining truth, free narrative, general questions

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 06-1-14

**Page-Reference:** 172

**Answer:** rapport building, explaining truth, free narrative, general questions

- 15 **Which of the following is *not* specified as a category of the narrative elaboration procedure?**

criminal acts  
participants  
conversation/affective states  
settings  
consequences

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 06-1-1  
5

**Page-  
Reference:** 172

**Answer:** criminal  
acts

- 16 **A police officer is interviewing 6-year old Timmy about suspected child sexual abuse by showing him a series of cue cards across different categories and asking him to talk about the suspected abuse while being prompted for details via the cue cards. What interviewing procedure is the police officer using?**

Step-wise interview  
Narrative elaboration  
CBCA interview  
NICHD interview  
Cognitive interview

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 06-1-16

**Page-  
Reference:** 172-173

**Answer:** Narrative  
elaboration

- 17 **In a study by Brown and Pipe (2003), approximately how much information was reported by 6- to 9-year-olds trained with the narrative elaboration technique compared to the control condition without training on the technique?**

half as much  
twice as much  
three times as much  
four times as much  
no difference in amount of information reported

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 06-1-17

**Page-Reference:** 173

**Answer:** twice as much

18 **What are the two types of prompts found in the National Institute of Child Health and Human Development Interview protocol?**

person and place  
place and action  
time and action  
time and cue  
person and consequences

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 06-1-18

**Page-Reference:** 173-174

**Answer:** time and cue

19 **According to the text, the revised NICHD protocol was designed to improve:**

the use anatomically detailed dolls  
rapport-building  
the use of human figure drawings  
guidance on where to conduct the interview  
the types of questions asked to children

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 06-1-19

**Page-Reference:** 174

**Answer:** rapport-building

20 **False memory syndrome is a term coined to describe what?**

- a client's false beliefs that they were sexually abused as children, having no memories of this abuse until they enter therapy to deal with some other psychological problem.
- a client's accurate belief that they were sexually abused as children, having no memories of this abuse until they enter therapy to deal with some other psychological problem.
- a client's false beliefs that they were sexually abused as children, having a continuous memory of this abuse.
- a client's accurate belief that they were sexually abused as children, having a continuous memory of this abuse.
- a client faking memories of abuse purposefully.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 06-1-20

**Page-Reference:** 175

**Answer:** a client's false beliefs that they were sexually abused as children, having no memories of this abuse until they enter therapy to deal with some other psychological problem.

21 **Approximately what percentage of the sample in Porter and Birt's study (2001) reports sexual assault or abuse as their most traumatic memory?**

5%  
10%  
15%  
20%  
25%

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 06-1-2  
1

**Page-  
Reference:** 176

**Answer:**  
5%

22 Which of the following is *not* part of the criteria specified by Lindsay and Read (1995) when determining the veracity of a recovered memory?

age of complainant at the time of the alleged abuse  
age of abuser at the time of the alleged abuse  
techniques used to recover memory  
similarity of reports across interview sessions  
motivation for recall

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 06-1-22

**Page-  
Reference:** 176

**Answer:** age of abuser at the time of the alleged abuse

23 Which of the following factors was consistently associated with a higher proportion of guilty verdicts across the studies of historical child sexual abuse (HCSA) described in your text?

repeated incidents  
older age of child at time of abuse  
claims of repression  
familial connection to the defendant  
sought therapy post-abuse

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 06-1-2  
3

**Page-  
Reference:** 177-17  
8

**Answer:** familial connection to the  
defendant

24 **When asked to describe a culprit, both children and adults tend to be accurate  
describing:**

height  
weight  
age  
interior facial features  
exterior facial features

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 06-1-24

**Page-  
Reference:** 178-179

**Answer:** exterior facial  
features

25 **In the study by Candell, Hayne, Strange, and Prevoo (2009), which type of errors led to children  
being more easily misled?**

change errors  
commission errors  
omission errors  
falsifiable errors  
suggestive errors

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:**  
06-1-2  
5

**Page-  
Reference:** 179

**Answer:** change  
errors

- 26 In the study conducted by Pozzulo and Lindsay (1998), it was found that, in contrast to a simultaneous lineup, a sequential lineup tended to \_\_\_\_\_ the gap for \_\_\_\_\_ between children and adults.

decrease, false positives  
decrease, false negatives  
increase, false positives  
increase, false negatives  
not affect, false positives

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:**  
06-1-2  
6

**Page-  
Reference:** 180

**Answer:** increase, false  
positives

- 27 Pozzulo and Lindsay (1999) found that, with the use of the elimination procedure, children produce \_\_\_\_\_ rates that are \_\_\_\_\_ than/as when the simultaneous procedure is used with adults.

false positive, lower  
false positive, higher  
false positive, about the same  
false negative, about the same  
false negative, lower

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:**  
06-1-2  
7

**Page-  
Reference:** 181

**Answer:** false positive,  
lower

28 **Pozzulo and Balfour (2006) found that correct rejection rates for children and adults were similar when:**

no change in appearance occurred.  
the simultaneous lineup was used when no change occurred.  
the elimination lineup was used when no change occurred.  
a change in appearance occurred regardless of lineup procedure used.  
the sequential lineup was used when no change occurred.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:**  
06-1-2  
8

**Page-  
Reference:** 181

**Answer:** a change in appearance occurred regardless of lineup procedure used.

29 **Recent research by Pozzulo, Dempsey, Bruer, and Sheahan (2010) reported that children perform with nearly 100% accuracy at identifying familiar faces in target-present lineups; however, in target-absent lineups, they display a significantly lower correct rejection rate than adults. This finding suggests that \_\_\_\_\_ may be more influential for children viewing target-absent lineups and lead to greater erroneous identifications.**

emotional factors  
memory problems  
social factors  
cognitive factors  
fatigue effects

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:**  
06-1-2  
9

**Page-  
Reference:** 182

**Answer:** social  
factors

30 **Under the new Canada Evidence Act, a child is defined as anyone  
under:**

18 years old  
16 years old  
14 years old  
12 years old  
10 years old

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:**  
06-1-3  
0

**Page-  
Reference:** 182

**Answer:** 14 years  
old

31 **Under the new Canada Evidence Act, section 16.1, how do children  
testify?**

under oath  
under a promise to tell the truth  
children are not allowed to testify  
a child's testimony is only allowed if it can be corroborated  
children testify the same way as adults do

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 06-1-31

**Page-Reference:** 183

**Answer:** under a promise to tell the truth

32 **Several alternatives to child in-court testimony have been identified. Which alternative is not permissible in the Canadian court system?**

closed-circuit testimony  
hearsay witnesses  
presence of a support person while the child gives testimony  
closing the courtroom to the public  
banning all cross-examination of the child

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 06-1-32

**Page-Reference:** 183-184

**Answer:** banning all cross-examination of the child

33 **Gina has disclosed to her first grade teacher that her grandfather sexually abused her. According to the rules of evidence and courtroom accommodations made for children, Gina's teacher would likely be considered a \_\_\_\_\_ and \_\_\_\_\_.**

biased witness, not called to testify  
hearsay witness, called to testify  
disclosure witness, called to testify  
hearsay witness, not called to testify  
disclosure witness, not called to testify

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 06-1-33

**Page-Reference:** 184

**Answer:** hearsay witness, called to testify

34 Which of the following is not a category of child maltreatment in Canada?

sexual abuse  
neglect  
emotional maltreatment  
economic abuse  
physical abuse

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 06-1-34

**Page-Reference:** 184-185

**Answer:** economic abuse

35 Which of the following currently applies to the use of corporal punishment in Canada?

Parents are permitted to strike their children on the head or face between the ages of 3 and 12.  
Parents may use physical force with a child between the ages of 3 and 12, but may not use an object to hit the child.

Parents are permitted to spank a child, under the age of 2 or older than age 12.  
Under no circumstances is a teacher allowed to use physical force with a student.  
Parents are permitted to use an object to hit the child.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:**  
06-1-3  
5

**Page-  
Reference:** 185

**Answer:** Parents may use physical force with a child between the ages of 3 and 12, but may not use an object to hit the child.

36 \_\_\_\_\_ are acts or omissions by caregivers that cause or could cause serious behavioural, cognitive, emotional, or mental disorders.

Emotional maltreatment  
Physical abuse  
Sexual abuse  
Neglect/Failure to provide  
Behavioural maltreatment

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:**  
06-1-3  
6

**Page-  
Reference:** 185

**Answer:** Emotional maltreatment

37 According to a 2008 incidence report of child maltreatment cases in Canada, the most common form of abuse substantiated was:

sexual abuse  
physical abuse  
emotional maltreatment  
neglect  
economic abuse

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 06-1-37

**Page-Reference:** 186,  
187

**Answer:**  
neglect

38 **As stated in the text, while risk factors for \_\_\_\_\_ are varied, risk factors for \_\_\_\_\_ tend to revolve around family composition.**

physical abuse, sexual abuse  
sexual abuse, physical abuse  
emotional abuse, physical abuse  
sexual abuse, emotional abuse  
neglect, emotional abuse

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 06-1-38

**Page-Reference:** 187

**Answer:** physical abuse, sexual abuse

39 **The presence of a non-natural parent (i.e., step-parent) in the household was identified as a risk factor for:**

physical abuse  
sexual abuse  
emotional abuse  
neglect  
economic abuse

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 06-1-39

**Page-  
Reference:** 187,  
188

**Answer:** sexual  
abuse

40 **Low socioeconomic status and large family size are risk factors associated with what type of abuse?**

physical abuse  
sexual abuse  
emotional abuse  
neglect  
economic abuse

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 06-1-40

**Page-  
Reference:** 187,  
188

**Answer:** physical  
abuse

41 **Perceptual-motor deficits are commonly reported as a short-term effect of what form of child abuse?**

physical abuse  
sexual abuse  
emotional abuse  
neglect  
economic abuse

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 06-1-41

**Page-Reference:** 187

**Answer:** physical abuse

42 Which was *not* identified by Putnam (2003) as a category of outcomes in adults with a history of childhood sexual abuse?

dysfunctional behaviours  
psychiatric disorders  
neurobiological dysregulation  
eating disorders  
all of the above were identified as outcomes

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 06-1-42

**Page-Reference:** 189

**Answer:** eating disorders

43 In a retrospective study by Perez-Fuentes et al. (2012) involving interviews between 2004-2005 in the United States, approximately what percentage of male participants and what percentage of female participants reported childhood sexual abuse?

5% male, 35% female  
15% male, 20% female  
25% male, 75% female  
20% male, 50% female  
10% male, 15% female

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 06-1-43

**Page-Reference:** 189

**Answer:** 25% male, 75% female

44 Which of the following was reported by Dube et al. (2005) to be twice as likely in men and women reporting child sexual abuse histories relative to those without such a history?

spousal abuse  
substance abuse disorders  
depression  
neurological disorders  
suicide attempts

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 06-1-44

**Page-Reference:** 189

**Answer:** suicide attempts

45 What is the maximum prison sentence for someone convicted of using the Internet to communicate with a child for the purpose of committing a sexual act?

6 months  
1 year  
18 months  
2 years  
5 years

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 06-1-4  
5

**Page-  
Reference:** 189

**Answer:** 5  
years

46 **How many children do police estimate are invited to meet for a sexual encounter over the internet?**

1%  
5%  
10%  
25%  
35%

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 06-1-46

**Page-  
Reference:** 189

**Answer:**  
25%

47 **Regarding outcomes to child maltreatment, research suggests that:**

the abuser experiences more negative outcomes than the child.  
there is absolutely no difference between children who were maltreated and those who were not.  
some children will experience positive outcomes.  
not all children who experience maltreatment will suffer negative outcomes.  
all children who experience maltreatment will suffer negative outcomes.

**Difficulty:** Moderate  
**QuestionID:** 06-1-47  
**Page-Reference:** 189

**Answer:** not all children who experience maltreatment will suffer negative outcomes.

#### Chapter 06 Short Answer Questions

1. Discuss the prevailing view regarding child witnesses from the 1600-1900s. Identify the four factors outlined by Ceci and Bruck (1993) that led to the renewed interest in child witnesses.

**Difficulty:** Moderate  
**QuestionID:** 06-2-01  
**Page-Reference:** 162-163

**Answer:** - For the most part, the prevailing legal attitude toward child witnesses for the following 300 years was that of skepticism. Research testing the validity of these negative attitudes toward child witnesses started in Europe in the early twentieth century. Reviews from this time seemed to conclude that young children were highly suggestible and had difficulty separating fact from fantasy, and thus were capable of providing inaccurate testimony, even if the testimony was of personal significance (Whipple, 1909, 1910, 1911, 1912).

- Ceci and Bruck (1993) outlined four factors that led to the renewed interest in child witnesses:  
1) Expert psychological testimony was becoming more acceptable in the courtroom.  
2) Social scientists were interested in research that could be applied to real-world problems.

2. **Name and briefly describe the two directions that have been taken to understand children's greater propensity toward suggestibility when recalling events (Bruck & Ceci, 1999).**

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 06-2-02

**Page-Reference:** 166-167

**Answer:** - *Social compliance:* Children trust and want to cooperate with adult interviewers even if they do not understand or have the knowledge to answer the question.  
- *Changes to the cognitive system:* There are developmental differences in the ways children and adults encode, store, and retrieve memories; differences also exist in terms of forgetting and retention. Finally, children "misattribute" where information comes from.

3. **What is Criterion-Based Content Analysis (CBCA)? Specify the assumption that underlies the CBCA and identify two potential problems with this method.**

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 06-2-03

**Page-Reference:** 169-171

**Answer:** - The CBCA is a method that facilitates distinguishing true from false statements made by children.  
- The criteria are based on the underlying assumption that the quality and content of true memories will differ from that of fabricated memories.  
- Potential problems with the CBCA:  
a. different decision rules for arriving at a conclusion;  
b. age of interviewee positively correlated with scores on the CBCA;  
c. inconsistencies in the number of criteria required for truthfulness to be determined;  
d. scores influenced by how familiar the event is to the child and the age of the child; and  
e. subjective scoring of the criteria.

4. **Name and briefly explain each of the steps of the Step-Wise Interview.**

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 06-2-04

**Page-Reference:** 171-172

**Answer:** a. *Rapport building:* Talk about neutral topics to make child feel at ease.  
b. *Ask for recall of two non-abuse events:* Ask child to describe two events that he or she experienced that are unrelated to the abuse incident (e.g., going to an amusement park, going to a birthday party).  
c. *Explaining truth:* Generally explain the concept of telling the truth and have the child agree to tell the truth.  
d. *Introduce critical topic:* Begin with general questions (e.g., "Do you know why you are here?") and, only if necessary, proceed to more specific questions that may serve as relevant prompts for disclosure (e.g., "Are there people you don't like to be with?").  
e. *Free narrative:* Ask child to describe the incident using a free narrative approach (i.e., without interrupting or interjecting particular questions to guide the child's description).  
f. *General questions:* Ask questions based on what the child said, in a manner the child understands.  
g. *Specific questions:* Follow up and clarify inconsistencies with more specific questions.  
h. *Interview aids (if necessary):* Have the child draw if he or she is not responding. Dolls may be introduced only after disclosure has occurred.  
i. *Conclude:* Thank the child for helping and explain what will happen next.

5. **What is the narrative elaboration interview procedure? Describe how this procedure works and what the research on this procedure suggests in terms of its usefulness in interviewing children?**

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 06-2-05

**Page-Reference:** 172-174

**Answer:** In the United States, Saywitz and Snyder (1996) developed an interview procedure called narrative elaboration. With this procedure, children learn to organize stories into relevant categories: Participants, Settings, Actions, Conversation/affective states, and Consequences. A card containing a line drawing is available for each category (see Figure 6.1 on p. 173 for four of them). These visual cues help children remember to state all that they can. Children practise telling stories with each card before being questioned about the critical event. Then, they are asked for a free narrative about the critical event—for example, "What happened?" Lastly, children are presented with each card and asked, "Does this card remind you to tell something else?"

To test the narrative elaboration procedure, children in Grades 1 and 2 and children in Grades 4, 5, and 6 witnessed a staged event (Saywitz & Snyder, 1996). The children were then interviewed with either the narrative-elaboration procedure (involving training in the use of reminder cue cards), exposure to the cue cards without training, or a "standard" interview without training or cue cards. Children interviewed with the narrative elaboration procedure reported more accurate information but not more inaccurate information for the staged event compared with when just the cue cards were presented without training or the standard interview. Also, children did not fabricate more information with the narrative-elaboration procedure

6. **What are the five criteria identified by Lindsay and Read (1995) that should be considered when determining the veracity of a recovered memory?**

**Difficulty:** Moderate  
**QuestionID:** 06-2-06  
**Page-Reference:** 176-177

**Answer:** Lindsay and Read (1995) suggested five criteria to consider when determining the veracity of a recovered memory:

- 1) *Age of complainant at the time of the alleged abuse.* It is unlikely that anyone would have a memory (of abuse or otherwise) prior to age 2.
- 2) *Techniques used to recover memory.* Techniques such as hypnosis and guided imagery heighten suggestibility and encourage fantasy.
- 3) *Similarity of reports across interview sessions.* Do the reports become increasingly more fantastic, or are they similar?
- 4) *Motivation for recall.* Is the client experiencing other psychological distress and wanting an answer to explain such feelings?
- 5) *Time elapsed since the alleged abuse.* It may be more difficult to recall abuse that occurred 25 years ago than abuse that took place 2 years ago.

Although some may "recover" memories of abuse and others never truly forget this traumatic experience, the courts are seeing a number of cases where there has been a delay in reporting the abuse.

7. **Describe the changes made to the competency inquiry with the enactment of Bill C-2 (2006).**

**Difficulty:** Moderate  
**QuestionID:** 06-2-07  
**Page-Reference:** 182-183

**Answer:** - Children are still required to show competency for understanding and responding to questions under the age of 14.  
- Children must promise to tell the truth and testify under such a promise. No longer are children questioned about their ability to understand an oath or required to take one.  
- Children are no longer questioned regarding their ability to distinguish between *truth* and *lie* and abstract notions of *promise*.

8. **A number of changes were made to improve courtroom accommodations for child witnesses in Canada. List four of these changes.**

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:**  
06-2-0  
8

**Page-Reference:** 183-18  
4

**Answer:** a. Use of a shield/screen to separate the child from the defendant;  
b. Allowing the child to provide testimony via closed-circuit television;  
c. Allowing a support person be with the child while he/she provides testimony;  
d. Admitting into evidence a videotaped interview with the child;  
e. Allowing hearsay testimony; and  
f. Restricting to courtroom to the public, press, or media.

9. **Describe the four categories of child maltreatment defined by the Child Maltreatment Section (CMS) of Health Canada.**

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:**  
06-2-0  
9

**Page-Reference:** 184-18  
5

**Answer: 1) Physical abuse** is defined as the deliberate application of force to any part of a child's body that results or may result in a non-accidental injury. Examples include shaking, choking, biting, kicking, burning, and poisoning. See Box 6.6 (p. 185) for a debate on whether corporal punishment is physical abuse.

**2) Sexual abuse** occurs when an adult or youth uses a child for sexual purposes. Examples include fondling, intercourse, incest, sodomy, exhibitionism, and exploitation through prostitution or the production of pornographic materials.

**3) Neglect/failure to provide** occurs when a child's caregivers do not provide the requisite attention to the child's emotional, psychological, or physical development. Examples include failure to supervise or protect leading to physical harm (such as drunk driving with a child), failure to provide adequate nutrition or clothing, failure to provide medical treatment, and exposing the child to unhygienic or dangerous living conditions.

**4) Emotional maltreatment** is defined as acts or omissions by caregivers that cause or could cause serious behavioural, cognitive, emotional, or mental disorders. Examples include verbal threats, socially isolating a child, intimidation, exploitation, terrorizing, or routinely making unreasonable demands on a child.

- 10 **Distinguish between the incidence and the prevalence of child maltreatment. Provide an example of each.**

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 06-2-10

**Page-Reference:** 186-187

**Answer:** When trying to understand how often maltreatment occurs, it is important to clarify the distinction between incidence and prevalence. The CMS defines **incidence** as the "number of new cases in a specific population occurring in a given time period, usually a year." (i.e., rate of 39.16 investigations per 1,000 children in 2008). In contrast, the **prevalence** of maltreatment is defined as "the proportion of a population at a specific point in time that was maltreated during childhood." (i.e., 45% of adult women surveyed reported at least one abusive childhood incident).

- 11 **Discuss the short and long term effects of physical abuse as well as sexual abuse.**

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 06-2-11

**Page-Reference:** 187-189

**Answer:** **PHYSICAL ABUSE:** A number of *short-term effects* of physical abuse have been determined. These include greater perceptual-motor deficits, lower measured intellectual functioning, lower academic achievement, externalizing behaviour such as aggression, and internalizing mental health difficulties such as hopelessness and depression. In a review of studies examining *the long-term effects* of physical abuse, Malinosky-Rummell and Hansen (1993) reported strong relations between physical abuse and nonfamilial and familial violence. Physically abused persons, especially males, engage in more nonfamilial violence than nonabused persons. In terms of familial violence, about 30% of physically abused or neglected persons abuse their own children (Kaufman & Zigler, 1987; Widom, 1989b). Moreover, being abused as a child predicted inflicting and receiving dating violence in a sample of university students. Also, spouses who were abusive reported higher rates of physical abuse than nonabusive spouses. Thus, experiencing physical abuse appears to increase the likelihood of perpetrating physical abuse.

**SEXUAL ABUSE:** Kendall-Tackett, Williams, and Finkelhor (1993) examined 45 studies that considered the *short-term effects* of childhood sexual abuse. Common effects across the studies were behaviour problems, lowered self-esteem, inappropriate sexuality, and symptoms consistent with post-traumatic stress disorder. Research has found that within two years of being abused, children report a number of physical difficulties such as sleep disturbance, eating

12 List four risk factors associated with physical abuse and four risk factors associated with sexual abuse.

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

06-2-12

**Page-Reference:**

188

**Answer:**

Type of Abuse

Physical Abuse  
Sexual Abuse

**Child Factors**

Male  
Female

**Parental Factors**

Young maternal age  
Living in a family without a biological parent

Single-parent status  
Poor relationship between parents

History of childhood physical abuse  
Presence of a stepfather

Spousal assault  
Poor child-parent relations

Unplanned pregnancy or negative attitude toward pregnancy

History of substance abuse

Social isolation or lack of social support

**Social Factors**

Low socioeconomic status

Large family size

**Chapter 07: Juries: Fact Finders**

**Chapter 07 Multiple Choice Questions**

1. **Mrs. White is suing Mr. Black for psychological damages she incurred while working for Mr. Black. During this time, Mrs. White was injured while working on an assembly line when a machine clamped down on her arm. Although she is healed, she claims to suffer PTSD as a result, and argues that Mr. Black knew the machine was malfunctioning. Mrs. White believes Mr. Black should pay the consequences of his negligent action. Which of the following statements about this case is correct?**

This case is not eligible to be tried by a jury.  
This criminal case would be tried by judge alone.  
This criminal case would be tried by judge and jury.  
This civil case would be tried by a 6-8 member jury.  
This civil case would be tried by a jury and require a unanimous verdict.

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

07-1-01

**Page-Reference:**

194

**Answer:** This civil case would be tried by a 6-8 member jury.

2. **In Canada, jury verdicts do not have to be unanimous in what type of trial?**

less serious indictable offences  
highly serious indictable offences  
summary conviction offences  
hybrid offences  
civil trials

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:**  
07-1-0  
2

**Page-  
Reference:** 194

**Answer:** civil  
trials

**3. In Canada, summary offences:**

- are tried by judge alone.
- are tried by judge and jury.
- are either tried by judge alone or by judge and jury as specified by the wishes of the defendant.
- are either tried by judge alone or by judge and jury depending on the severity of the offence.
- are either tried by judge alone or by judge and jury depending on the decision of the Crown prosecution.

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:**  
07-1-0  
3

**Page-  
Reference:** 194

**Answer:** are tried by judge  
alone.

**4. Fred Wilson violated his probation order. According to your text, Mr. Wilson would be charged with a(n) \_\_\_\_\_ offence and his trial would likely be heard by \_\_\_\_\_.**

- summary offence, judge only
- summary offence, judge and jury
- indictable offence, judge only
- indictable offence, judge and jury
- hybrid offence, judge only

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 07-1-0  
4

**Page-Reference:** 194

**Answer:** indictable offence, judge only

**5. Which of the following is not true regarding indictable offences in Canada?**

- The accused can choose whether the trial proceeds by judge alone or judge and jury in some indictable offences.
- Less serious indictable offences are heard by a judge sitting alone.
- Highly serious indictable offences are tried by judge and jury.
- Highly serious indictable offences can be tried by judge alone if the accused and attorney general agree.
- All of the above are true regarding indictable offences in Canada.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 07-1-0  
5

**Page-Reference:** 194-19  
5

**Answer:** All of the above are true regarding indictable offences in Canada.

**6. Which legislation outlines the criteria for jury eligibility in each of the provinces and territories in Canada?**

- Criminal Code of Canada
- Juries Act
- Corrections and Conditional Release Act
- Jury Selection Code
- Summons Act

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 07-1-0  
6

**Page-Reference:** 195

**Answer:** Juries  
Act

7. **Mila receives a jury summons in the mail, but she throws it in the trash and does not show up to the courthouse at the appointed time. What is the likely outcome for Mila?**

no penalty  
forced to serve as a juror on the next available trial  
a monetary fine  
will not be excused from jury duty  
required to sit and watch the entire trial as an observer

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 07-1-0  
7

**Page-Reference:** 195

**Answer:** a monetary  
fine

8. **A(n) \_\_\_\_\_ can be used by the Crown or the defence to reject a potential juror without having to provide a reason for doing so.**

adjournment  
challenge for cause  
nullification  
voir dire  
peremptory challenge

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 07-1-08

**Page-Reference:** 195

**Answer:** peremptory challenge

9. In most Canadian trials, the defence and Crown are each allowed \_\_\_\_\_ peremptory challenges.

- 6
- 10
- 12
- 16
- 20

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 07-1-09

**Page-Reference:** 195-196

**Answer:** 12

10 In Canadian murder trials, the defence and Crown are each allowed \_\_\_\_\_ peremptory challenges.

- 6
- 10
- 12
- 16
- 20

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 07-1-10

**Page-Reference:** 195-196

**Answer:**

- 11 You have been summoned as a prospective juror, and are being asked questions by the Crown and defence. When the defence finds out you are taking a course in forensic psychology, he argues that you should not be eligible to be a juror in this case. What type of challenge is the defence council using in this situation?

ex-post-facto challenge  
challenge for cause  
nullification challenge  
voir dire challenge  
peremptory challenge

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

07-1-11

**Page-Reference:**

196

**Answer:** challenge for cause

- 12 According to the Supreme Court of Canada, the two fundamental characteristics of jurors are:

representativeness and commitment  
commitment and truthfulness  
impartiality and truthfulness  
commitment and impartiality  
representativeness and impartiality

**Difficulty:**

Easy

**QuestionID:**

07-1-12

**Page-Reference:**

196

**Answer:** representativeness and impartiality

- 13 The case of *R. v. Brown* (2005) was used in your text as an example of what jury-related

jury representativeness  
jury nullification  
jury impartiality  
peremptory challenge  
challenge for cause

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 07-1-1  
3

**Page-  
Reference:** 197

**Answer:** jury  
representativeness

14 **According to retired Supreme Court Justice of Canada Frank Iacobucci, which population is currently under-represented on Canadian juries?**

women  
Aboriginals  
Asians  
youth  
men

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 07-1-1  
4

**Page-  
Reference:** 196-19  
7

**Answer:**  
Aboriginals

15 **The term used to describe an unbiased juror:**

representative  
impartial  
naive  
immature  
partial

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 07-1-1  
5

**Page-  
Reference:** 196

**Answer:**  
impartial

16 **An option to reject biased jurors is known as**  
a:

change of venue  
adjournment  
challenge for cause  
nullification  
deliberation

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 07-1-1  
6

**Page-  
Reference:** 198-19  
9

**Answer:** challenge for  
cause

17 **Research on the effects of pretrial publicity and juror decision-making by Ruva and colleagues**  
has revealed that:

only negative pretrial publicity influences verdicts.  
only positive pretrial publicity influences verdicts.  
both negative and positive pretrial publicity influences verdicts.  
verdicts are not influenced by this publicity as it is disregarded by jurors.  
jurors are only selected if they have not been exposed to any publicity about the defendant.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:**  
07-1-1  
7

**Page-  
Reference:** 200

**Answer:** both negative and positive pretrial publicity influences verdicts.

18 Which of the following is *not* a strategy used to increase the chances of an impartial jury?

adjournment  
challenge for cause  
change of venue  
peremptory challenge  
postponing the trial

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:**  
07-1-1  
8

**Page-  
Reference:** 201

**Answer:** peremptory challenge

19 Which of the following refers to delaying the trial until sometime in the future?

adjournment  
challenge for cause  
change of venue  
peremptory challenge  
postponing the trial

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 07-1-1  
9

**Page-  
Reference:** 201

**Answer:**  
adjournment

20 **In a challenge for cause, jurors are selected  
by:**

the judge  
the Crown  
the defence  
members of the jury pool  
the accused

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 07-1-20

**Page-  
Reference:** 202

**Answer:** members of the jury  
pool

21 **Which of the following is *not* one of the functions of a  
jury?**

to use the wisdom of 12 to reach a verdict  
to promote democracy  
to protect against outdated laws  
to increase knowledge about the justice system  
to act as the conscience of the community

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 07-1-2  
1

**Page-  
Reference:** 203

**Answer:** to promote  
democracy

22 **What is the term used to describe a jury that ignores the law when reaching a verdict?**

jury nullification  
jury resistance  
jury tampering  
jury invalidation  
jury conscience

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 07-1-2  
2

**Page-  
Reference:** 203

**Answer:** jury  
nullification

23 **Chaos theory in relation to jury nullification refers to:**

jurors being guided by emotions and personal biases rather than the law.  
jurors upholding the law despite the public outcry that their verdict will likely cause.  
jurors disregarding the law based on extralegal factors such as the appearance of the defendant.  
jurors being dismissed from juries in controversial cases when biased decision-making is evident.  
jurors following the law so as not to incite chaos in the courtroom.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 07-1-2  
3

**Page-Reference:** 203

**Answer:** jurors being guided by emotions and personal biases rather than the law.

24 **The 1975 change to Quebec law whereby a jury verdict could no longer be overturned on appeal is known as the:**

Morgentaler Amendment  
Deadlock Amendment  
Latimer Amendment  
Authoritarian Amendment  
Quebec Amendment

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 07-1-24

**Page-Reference:** 204

**Answer:** Morgentaler Amendment

25 **The Morgentaler and Latimer cases discussed in your text are illustrations of:**

challenge for cause  
jury nullification  
jury impartiality  
case-specific approaches  
the black sheep effect

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 07-1-2  
5

**Page-  
Reference:** 204

**Answer:** jury  
nullification

26 **Meissner, Brigham, and Pfeifer (2003) reached what overall conclusion regarding nullification instructions?**

Nullification instructions produce socially favourably and socially unfavourably verdicts.  
Nullification instructions only produce socially favourably verdicts.  
Nullification instructions only produce socially unfavourably verdicts.  
Nullification instructions do not influence verdicts.  
The effect of nullification instructions cannot be predicted.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 07-1-26

**Page-  
Reference:** 204

**Answer:** Nullification instructions produce socially favourably and socially unfavourably verdicts.

27 **Which research method is most commonly used to study jury decision making?**

simulation studies  
post-trial interviews  
archival studies  
examination of media reports  
correlational analysis

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 07-1-2  
7

**Page-  
Reference:** 206

**Answer:** simulation  
studies

28 Which of the following methods of researching jury behaviour is *least* likely to be used in Canada?

archival research  
post-trial interviews  
simulation studies  
field studies  
All of the above are commonly used in Canada.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 07-1-28

**Page-  
Reference:** 205-206

**Answer:** post-trial  
interviews

29 Which methodology is limited with the types of research questions that can be explored in the area of jury decision-making?

field studies  
simulation studies  
archives  
post-trial interviews  
experimental studies

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:**  
07-1-2  
9

**Page-  
Reference:** 205-20  
6

**Answer:**  
archives

30 **What is a key characteristic of jury simulation studies?**

Archival material is used.  
Variables of interest are manipulated.  
Individuals who have served on juries in the past typically participate.  
Mock trials are usually longer than real trials.  
There is high external validity.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:**  
07-1-3  
0

**Page-  
Reference:** 206

**Answer:** Variables of interest are manipulated.

31 **Which research method is able to establish cause-and-effect relationships?**

archives  
simulation studies  
post-trial interviews  
field studies  
all of the above

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 07-1-3  
1

**Page-  
Reference:** 206

**Answer:** simulation  
studies

- 32 **Note taking by jurors has been proposed as one possible way of improving juror comprehension. However, a number of researchers have pointed out potential problems with this comprehension aid. Which of the following has been proposed as a potential problem with juror note taking?**

Jurors who have taken notes may exert an undue influence over those who haven't.  
Note taking may distort perceptions of the case.  
Note taking may be disruptive to other jurors.  
Note taking may impede memory.  
Note taking favours the defence.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 07-1-32

**Page-  
Reference:** 208

**Answer:** Jurors who have taken notes may exert an undue influence over those who haven't.

- 33 **According to a review of research examining juror note taking, Penrod and Heuer (1997) concluded that:**

note takers distract jurors who do not take notes.  
note takers cannot keep up with the evidence being presented.  
jurors overemphasize the evidence that they have noted, at the expense of evidence they have not recorded.  
juror note taking favours the Crown/prosecution.  
notes are an accurate record of the trial.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 07-1-33

**Page-Reference:** 209

**Answer:** notes are an accurate record of the trial.

34 **According to a review of research examining juror questions, Penrod and Heuer (1997) concluded that:**

juror questions help reveal truth.  
juror questions help increase jurors', judges', and lawyers' satisfaction with the trial and verdict.  
jury questioning increases a juror's understanding of the case facts.  
jurors tend to ask legally inappropriate questions.  
all of the above.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 07-1-34

**Page-Reference:** 209

**Answer:** jury questioning increases a juror's understanding of the case facts.

35 **As it currently stands in Canada, the practice of jurors asking questions and taking notes is:**

left to the discretion of the juror  
left to the discretion of the judge  
left to the discretion of the Crown  
compulsory  
not permitted

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 07-1-3  
5

**Page-Reference:** 210

**Answer:** left to the discretion of the judge

**36 How can the CSI effect be described?**

The education of jurors whereby they are more likely to convict if techniques seen on television are used.

The effect of watching child sexual interference videos on mental health.

The fatigue associated with crime scene analysis.

A new mental health syndrome.

A term used to explain how people learn facts about policing.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 07-1-3  
6

**Page-Reference:** 210-21  
1

**Answer:** The education of jurors whereby they are more likely to convict if techniques seen on television are used.

**37 Freya is serving as a jury member in a murder trial. She strongly feels that the defendant is guilty when she hears evidence presented that is similar to what she has seen on her favourite crime drama *Law and Order*. Freya's judgment is likely influenced by what psychological phenomenon?**

the story model  
jury nullification  
the CSI effect  
leniency bias  
polarization

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:** 07-1-37

**Page-Reference:** 210-211

**Answer:** the CSI effect

38 Which of the following is the most empirically supported model of jury decision making?

relative contribution model  
just-world attribution model  
explanation model  
justification model  
mathematical model

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:** 07-1-38

**Page-Reference:** 213

**Answer:** explanation model

39 Which of the following is an example of an explanation model of jury decision making?

math model  
story model  
new-age model  
structure model  
hybrid model

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

07-1-39

**Page-Reference:**

213

**Answer:** story model

40 In Canada, juries in criminal trials must reach a \_\_\_\_\_ verdict.

majority  
unanimous  
51% majority  
hung  
75% majority

**Difficulty:**

Easy

**QuestionID:**

07-1-40

**Page-Reference:**

215

**Answer:** unanimous

41 A jury is in the process of deliberations. The six jurors who initially felt that the accused was innocent begin to feel even more strongly that the accused is innocent, while the six jurors who initially felt that the accused was guilty begin to feel even more strongly that the accused is guilty. This process is an example of:

normative influence  
compliance  
polarization  
unconscious transference leniency  
leniency bias

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:**  
07-1-4  
1

**Page-  
Reference:** 215

**Answer:**  
polarization

42 **Numerous studies have now examined the effect of jury size. This research indicates that, compared to a 12-person jury, a 6-person jury is likely to:**

be less representative of the community.  
recall less of the evidence presented at trial.  
spend less time deliberating.  
reach a unanimous decision.  
all of the above.

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:**  
07-1-4  
2

**Page-  
Reference:** 216

**Answer:** all of the  
above.

43 **Following deliberations, a jury may be more likely to return a verdict of not guilty. This refers to:**

the polarization effect  
the verdict driven effect  
the evidence driven effect  
the leniency effect  
the nullification effect

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 07-1-4  
3

**Page-  
Reference:** 215

**Answer:** the leniency  
effect

- 44 **Sam and the other members of the jury have just finished hearing all the evidence in a sexual assault trial. Once they enter the deliberation room, Sam says that he thinks they should take an initial poll to see what verdict each juror would return, and then they can discuss the evidence. Sam is using what type of style of jury deliberation?**

polarization  
evidence driven  
verdict driven  
leniency  
nullification

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 07-1-44

**Page-  
Reference:** 216

**Answer:** verdict  
driven

- 45 **In their study examining rape myths, sexual attitudes, and gender in relation to a date rape scenario, Hammond, Berry, and Rodriguez (2011) found that:**

both males and females endorsed rape myths and were more lenient towards the accused.  
female jurors were more likely to endorse rape myths but were more punitive towards the accuser.  
female jurors were less likely to endorse rape myths but more likely to be lenient towards the accused and accuser.  
male jurors were less likely to endorse rape myths and were more punitive towards the accused.  
male jurors were more likely to endorse rape myths and were more lenient towards the accused.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 07-1-4  
5

**Page-Reference:** 217

**Answer:** male jurors were more likely to endorse rape myths and were more lenient towards the accused.

46 **A meta-analysis concerning racial bias and verdicts by Mitchell, Haw, Pfeifer, and Meissner (2005) revealed that:**

jurors are less likely to return guilty verdicts for 'other-race' defendants because they don't want to appear biased.  
jurors are more likely to return guilty verdicts for 'other-race' defendants than for defendants of their own race.  
mixed-race juries produce the most accurate verdicts as they balance out any potential biases.  
jurors are more likely to convict 'other-race' defendants, especially when racial issues are discussed during trial.  
jurors are always less likely to convict 'other-race' defendants due to the leniency bias.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 07-1-4  
6

**Page-Reference:** 217

**Answer:** jurors are more likely to return guilty verdicts for 'other-race' defendants than for defendants of their own race.

47 **Imagine that you are a consultant for defence council in a case involving an Aboriginal male accused of murdering a white female, and a jury made up of mostly Caucasians. Given the research on racial bias in court, what advice would you give the defence lawyer?**

Advise the lawyer to "play the race card" (i.e., mention racial issues to jury) as this helps to reduce juror bias towards other-race defendants.

Advise the lawyer to focus on presenting his case with strong evidence and leave race out of it completely.

Advise the lawyer to focus on where the male was born.

Advise the lawyer to discredit the victim as much as possible by labeling her as a 'black sheep' to elicit sympathy towards the defendant.

Advise the lawyer to focus on the most confusing part of the allegations.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:**  
07-1-4  
7

**Page-  
Reference:** 217-21  
8

**Answer:** Advise the lawyer to "play the race card" (i.e., mention racial issues to jury) as this helps to reduce juror bias towards other-race defendants.

- 48 **Juan is a young adult man of Hispanic heritage, accused of murdering his Caucasian girlfriend Suzanne. Carmela is a Hispanic woman who is serving as a member of the jury. According to the black sheep effect, Carmela would be likely to:**

Be more lenient towards Juan if the victim is portrayed as a 'black sheep'.

Be more punitive towards Juan if the evidence against him is weak.

Be more lenient towards Juan if the evidence against him is strong.

Be more punitive towards Juan if the evidence against him is strong.

Be more lenient towards Juan because they are the same race, independent of whether the evidence against him is strong or weak.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:**  
07-1-4  
8

**Page-  
Reference:** 217-21  
8

**Answer:** Be more punitive towards Juan if the evidence against him is strong.

- 49 **According to research by Cunnell and Cooi (2010) on juror decision making and the Cognitive**

dogmatic processing  
rational processing  
elaborative processing  
narrative processing  
experiential processing

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

07-1-49

**Page-**

218

**Reference:**

**Answer:** experiential processing

50 Which of the following is true regarding jurors who are willing to give the death penalty?

- They recall more evidence presented at trial.
- They are less likely to understand judicial instructions.
- They are less likely to render a not guilty verdict than jurors who are not willing to give the death penalty.
- They are more likely to render a guilty verdict than jurors who are not willing to give the death penalty.
- They are less likely to pay attention during trials when complex evidence is being presented.

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

07-1-50

**Page-**

219

**Reference:**

**Answer:** They are more likely to render a guilty verdict than jurors who are not willing to give the death penalty.

51 Which defendant characteristic below has been found to influence a verdict?

criminal history  
mental health  
occupation  
marital status  
religion

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 07-1-5  
1

**Page-  
Reference:** 219

**Answer:** criminal  
history

**52 The current rape shield provisions in Canadian courts specify that:**

A woman's prior sexual history cannot be introduced in court.  
A woman's prior sexual history is admissible evidence and necessary for determining credibility.  
A woman's sexual history is deemed irrelevant in court, unless prior false allegations of rape exist on record.  
A woman's prior sexual history is relevant only when it concerns previous confirmed victimization.  
A woman's prior sexual history may be admitted to court at the judge's discretion and only if relevant to the case.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 07-1-52

**Page-  
Reference:** 220

**Answer:** A woman's prior sexual history may be admitted to court at the judge's discretion and only if relevant to the case.

**53 In *R. v. Darrach*, 2000, the Supreme Court of Canada decided that the onus is on the \_\_\_\_\_ to show the victim's sexual history is relevant in a sexual assault case.**

Crown  
defendant  
victim  
jury  
police officer

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:**  
07-1-5  
3

**Page-  
Reference:** 222

**Answer:**  
defendant

54 **According to a study by Sundby (1997) on jurors' perceptions of different types of witnesses, which of the following witnesses would be viewed most negatively?**

a lay expert  
a professional expert  
a friend of the defendant  
a family member of the defendant  
there are generally no differences in jurors' perceptions of these different witnesses

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:**  
07-1-5  
4

**Page-  
Reference:** 223-22  
4

**Answer:** a professional  
expert

## Chapter 07 Short Answer Questions

1. **What is meant by the juror characteristic of impartiality? What are two of the issues surrounding impartiality?**

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 07-2-01

**Page-Reference:** 198

**Answer:** - Impartiality: A characteristic of jurors who are unbiased

- Three possible issues:

- a. To be impartial means a juror must set aside any pre-existing biases, prejudices, or attitudes and judge the case solely on the basis of the admissible evidence.
- b. For a juror to be impartial, he or she must ignore any information that is not part of the admissible evidence.
- c. A juror should not be connected to the defendant. A juror is partial if he or she has a connection to the defendant so may view the evidence subjectively and unduly influence the other jurors.

2. **Besides the method of placing a ban on pretrial publicity, list and explain two other methods that courts can employ to increase the likelihood of jury impartiality.**

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 07-2-02

**Page-Reference:** 201

**Answer:** a. Change of venue:

- Crown or defence may argue that the trial should be moved to a different community than the one in which the crime occurred, as it may be difficult to obtain an impartial jury from the local community.

b. Adjournment:

- The judge may delay the trial for a certain period of time with the goal of allowing biasing effects of pretrial information to dissipate.

c. Challenge for cause:

- Crown or defence may argue their suspicion of bias among the potential jury pool and proceed by questioning prospective jurors to identify and reject those demonstrating partiality.

3. **List four functions of a jury.**

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:**  
07-2-0  
3

**Page-  
Reference:** 203

**Answer:** - To apply the law to the admissible evidence in a case and render a verdict

- To use the wisdom of 12 to reach a verdict
- To protect against outdated laws
- To increase knowledge about the justice system
- To act as the conscience of the community

4. **List and describe one advantage and one disadvantage of using simulation studies to investigate jury decision making. Outline a simulation study to study the effects of victim characteristics in a sexual assault case on juror decision making. Make sure you clearly identify your independent variables (and/or person characteristics) and dependent variables.**

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:**  
07-2-0  
4

**Page-  
Reference:** 206

**Answer:** - *Advantages:* high internal validity, can reveal cause-and-effect relationships

- *Disadvantages:* low external validity, limited generalizability, may not be representative of real jury pools

- Example of a potential experiment:

\* Recruit university students to act as mock jurors

\* Have mock jurors read a written transcript of a sexual assault trial

\* Independent variables/person characteristics: sex and ethnic background of witness, defendant, or victim

\* Dependent variable: verdict (guilty, not guilty), degree of confidence in verdict

5. **List two proposed advantages and two proposed disadvantages associated with the asking of questions by jurors as a courtroom comprehension aid.**

**Difficulty:**  
Moderat

**QuestionID:** 07-2-05

**Page-Reference:** 209

**Answer:** - *Advantages:*

\* It promotes greater understanding of the evidence.

\* Jurors ask legally appropriate questions.

\* If counsel objects and the objection is sustained, the jury does not draw inappropriate inferences from unanswered questions.

\* Jurors do not become advocates.

- *Disadvantages:*

\* Juror questions do not clearly help to get to the truth.

\* Juror questions do not increase the jurors', judges', or lawyers' satisfaction with the trial and verdict.

**6. List four proposed reforms for judges' instructions aimed at facilitating juror understanding.**

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 07-2-06

**Page-Reference:** 212

**Answer:** - rewriting instructions

- providing a written copy of instructions to jurors

- pre- and post- evidence instructions

- having lawyers clarify legal instruction during their presentation to the jury

**7. In the context of jury decision making, define the terms *polarization*, *leniency bias*, and *black sheep effect*.**

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 07-2-07

**Page-Reference:** 215, 218

**Answer:** - *Polarization:* Jurors become more extreme in their original position following deliberations.

8. In the context of jury decision making, identify two defendant characteristics that are most likely to result in guilty verdicts, and explain each (briefly).

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 07-2-08

**Page-Reference:** 219-220

**Answer:** - *Criminal history*: greater guilty verdicts are returned when jurors are exposed to a defendant's prior criminal history, especially if there is one (or more) conviction on record.

- *Attractiveness*: Jurors tend to be more lenient towards attractive defendants and more punitive towards unattractive defendants.

- *Stereotypes*: Jurors attend more to the evidence presented in cases where the defendant fits their stereotype (i.e., male offender), which leads to higher guilty verdicts in stereotypical cases.

## Chapter 08: The Role of Mental Illness in Court

### Chapter 08 Multiple Choice Questions

1. Which of the following refers to criminal intent?

modus operandi  
mens rea  
lorem ipsum  
actus reus  
magister dixit

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 08-1-0  
1

**Page-Reference:** 228

**Answer:** mens  
rea

2. Historically, the key case that was used in the context of determining the fitness standard was:

*R. v. Taylor*  
*R. v. Prichard*  
*R. v. McNaughton*  
*R. v. Swain*  
*Winko v. British Columbia*

**Difficulty:** Moderat  
e

**QuestionID:** 08-1-02

**Page-Reference:** 229

**Answer:** *R. v. Prichard*

3. **In what Canadian case was it concluded that an unfit person could not be sentenced?**

*R. v. Swain*  
*R. v. Demers*  
*Winko v. British Columbia*  
*R. v. Arenburg*  
*R. v. Balliram*

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 08-1-03

**Page-Reference:** 229

**Answer:** *R. v. Balliram*

4. **As currently specified in the Canadian Criminal Code, a defendant is unfit to stand trial if he or she is:**

unable to plead to the indictment.  
unwilling to testify in his or her own defence.  
hostile toward members of his or her defence team.  
unable, on account of a mental disorder, to understand the possible consequences of the proceedings.  
suffering from schizophrenia.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 08-1-04

**Page-Reference:** 229

**Answer:** unable, on account of a mental disorder, to understand the possible consequences of the proceedings.

5. **Jerome is being accused of assaulting a man, and while he understands that what he did was wrong, he doesn't understand why he is in court and the consequences of the court proceedings. He also is having a difficult time talking with his council and participating in his own defence as he believes his lawyer is really working "for the other side" and that the judge has it out for him. Upon evaluation, Jerome would likely be considered:**

insane  
NCRMD  
unfit to stand trial  
sane  
fit to stand trial

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 08-1-05

**Page-Reference:** 229-230

**Answer:** unfit to stand trial

6. **According to Bill C-30, the entire length of detention that a defendant can be held in custody before the fitness evaluation is completed cannot exceed:**

24 hours  
5 days  
30 days  
60 days  
90 days

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 08-1-06

**Page-Reference:** 230

**Answer:** 60 days

**7. The issue of a defendant's fitness may be raised:**

- at the beginning of the trial
- when entering a plea
- when a defendant chooses not to be represented by counsel
- during sentencing
- all of the above

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 08-1-07

**Page-Reference:** 230

**Answer:** all of the above

**8. The burden of proving unfitness is on:**

- the Crown
- the defendant
- the defence
- the judge
- the party who raises the issue.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 08-1-08

**Page-Reference:** 230

**Answer:** the party who raises the issue.

9. In Canada, which of the following would be allowed to conduct court-ordered assessments of fitness to stand trial and criminal responsibility?

- an experimental forensic psychologist
- a clinical forensic psychologist
- a medical doctor
- a psychometrist
- a research forensic psychologist

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 08-1-09

**Page-Reference:** 232

**Answer:** a medical doctor

10 In Canada, what initial screening instrument is typically used for determining fitness to stand trial?

- Fitness Interview Test-Revised (FIT-R)
- Competency Screening Test (CST)
- Competency to Stand Trial Assessment Instrument (CAI)
- Interdisciplinary Fitness Interview (IFI)
- MacArthur Competence Assessment Tool-Criminal Adjudication (MacCAT-CA)

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 08-1-10

**Page-Reference:** 232-233

**Answer:** Fitness Interview Test-Revised (FIT-R)

11 In conducting a fitness evaluation in Canada, criteria related to a defendant's understanding of

having factual knowledge about the criminal procedure  
understanding the role of key participants in the trial  
understanding the severity of the charges  
understanding the arrest process  
all of the above

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 08-1-11

**Page-Reference:** 232-233

**Answer:** all of the above

**12 Which of the following fitness instruments involves uncompleted sentences that the defendant must finish?**

Fitness Interview Test-Revised (FIT-R)  
Competency Screening Test (CST)  
Competency to Stand Trial Assessment Instrument (CAI)  
Interdisciplinary Fitness Interview (IFI)  
MacArthur Competence Assessment Tool-Criminal Adjudication (MacCAT-CA)

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 08-1-12

**Page-Reference:** 233

**Answer:** Competency Screening Test (CST)

**13 Marley is being assessed to determine if she is fit to stand trial. The doctor presents her with a series of hypothetical scenarios and then asks her 22 questions about her understanding of these scenarios. Which of the following fitness instruments is Marley being administered?**

Fitness Interview Test-Revised (FIT-R)  
Competency Screening Test (CST)  
Competency to Stand Trial Assessment Instrument (CAI)  
Interdisciplinary Fitness Interview (IFI)  
MacArthur Competence Assessment Tool-Criminal Adjudication (MacCAT-CA)

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 08-1-1  
3

**Page-  
Reference:** 234

**Answer:** MacArthur Competence Assessment Tool-Criminal Adjudication (MacCAT-CA)

- 14 **Research by Pirelli, Gottdiener, and Zapf (2011) has found that all of the following characteristics were more likely associated with defendants deemed incompetent relative to competent, except:**

earlier psychiatric hospitalizations  
history of previous arrests  
unemployed  
diagnosed with psychotic disorder  
unmarried

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 08-1-1  
4

**Page-  
Reference:** 234-23  
5

**Answer:** history of previous  
arrests

- 15 **Which of the following statements concerning the defendant's fitness to stand trial and the insanity defence is true?**

With fitness you are assessing past mental condition (at time of offence); with the insanity defence you are assessing current mental condition.

With fitness you are assessing current mental condition; with the insanity defence you are assessing past mental condition (at time of offence).

With fitness and the insanity defence, you are assessing past mental condition (at the time of the offence).

With fitness and the insanity defence, you are assessing current mental condition.

With fitness and the insanity defence, you are assessing both past mental condition (at time of offence) and current mental condition.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 08-1-15

**Page-Reference:** 234-235,239-241

**Answer:** With fitness you are assessing current mental condition; with the insanity defence you are assessing past mental condition (at time of offence).

16 **According to research by Pirelli, Gottdiener, and Zapf (2011), defendants found unfit to stand trial are eight times more likely than fit defendants to:**

have been previously incarcerated  
have an extensive criminal background  
suffer from a substance abuse disorder  
meet the criteria for a psychotic disorder  
have a violent background

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 08-1-16

**Page-Reference:** 235

**Answer:** meet the criteria for a psychotic disorder

17 **When a defendant is found unfit to stand trial, the most common form of treatment for restoring fitness is:**

cognitive therapy  
medication  
behaviour therapy  
psychodynamic therapy  
client-centred therapy

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:**  
08-1-1  
7

**Page-  
Reference:** 235

**Answer:**  
medication

18 **According to Bill C-10, a court can stay the proceedings of a defendant who is unlikely to become fit if:**

the accused is unlikely ever to become fit.  
the accused poses no threat to the public.  
staying the proceedings results in the proper administration of justice.  
all of the above.  
none of the above.

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:**  
08-1-1  
8

**Page-  
Reference:** 239

**Answer:** all of the  
above.

19 **Brian is an avid fisherman, and he assaults a man who tried to destroy his fishing business. A week following the assault, Brian was in a car accident and incurred a traumatic brain injury, which has been deemed permanent by doctors. According to Bill C-10, when Brian goes to court, he should be deemed unfit to stand trial and receive a disposition of:**

an absolute discharge  
a conditional discharge  
detention in a psychiatric facility  
house arrest  
a prison sentence

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 08-1-19

**Page-Reference:** 239

**Answer:** an absolute discharge

20 **What standard is the insanity defence in Canada based on?**

McNaughton Standard  
Fitness Test  
Irresistible Impulse Standard  
American Law Institute Standard of Insanity  
Criminal Lunatics Act

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 08-1-20

**Page-Reference:** 240

**Answer:** McNaughton Standard

21 **Which of the following is *not* one of the critical elements that emerged from the McNaughton verdict?**

A defendant must be found to be suffering from a disease of the mind.  
A defendant must not know the quality of the act he/she is performing.  
A defendant must not know that what he/she is doing is wrong.  
A defendant must be able to understand the purpose of criminal proceedings.  
The defendant must not know the nature of the act he/she is performing.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 08-1-21

**Page-Reference:** 240

**Answer:** A defendant must be able to understand the purpose of criminal proceedings.

22 **When the Department of Justice commissioned the Mental Disorder Project in the early 1980s, this review found that mental disorder legislation in the Criminal Code was in conflict with:**

the Supreme Court of Canada  
the Charter of Rights and Freedoms  
Brian's Law  
the Criminal Lunatics Act  
the McNaughton Rules

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 08-1-22

**Page-Reference:** 240-241

**Answer:** the Charter of Rights and Freedoms

23 **What is the current insanity defence in Canada?**

not guilty by reason of insanity  
not guilty because of mental illness  
guilty but mentally ill  
not criminally responsible on account of  
mental disorder  
not criminally responsible due to insanity

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 08-1-2  
3

**Page-  
Reference:** 241

**Answer:** not criminally responsible on account of mental disorder

- 24 **There have been many changes to the legislation surrounding dispositions when mentally disordered defendants are involved. In 1999, the Supreme Court of Canada stated that a defendant who is NCRMD should be detained only if he/she poses a criminal threat to the public; but otherwise the defendant should receive an absolute discharge. In what case did this ruling arise from?**

*R. v. Swain*  
*R. v. Demers*  
*Winko v. British Columbia*  
*R. v. Arenburg*  
*R. v. Balliram*

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 08-1-24

**Page-  
Reference:** 241

**Answer:** *Winko v. British Columbia*

- 25 **What is the name of the law that led to the implementation of community treatment orders for mentally ill individuals?**

Winko's Law  
Brian's Law  
McNaughton's Law  
Swain's Law  
Peel's Law

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 08-1-25

**Page-Reference:** 241-242

**Answer:** Brian's Law

26 According to American data, what proportion of felony cases will argue an insanity defence?

less than 1%  
10%  
25%  
30%  
40%

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 08-1-26

**Page-Reference:** 242

**Answer:** less than 1%

27 Of the few defendants that raise the insanity defence in the United States, about \_\_\_\_\_ are successful.

5%  
10%  
15%  
20%  
25%

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 08-1-2  
7

**Page-Reference:** 242

**Answer:**  
25%

28 In Canada, the \_\_\_\_\_ is the instrument used to assess criminal responsibility.

MacCAT-CA  
FIT-R  
R-CRAS  
NCRMD  
IFI

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 08-1-28

**Page-Reference:** 242

**Answer:** R-  
CRAS

29 When may the Crown raise the issue of insanity in Canada?

prior to the start of a trial  
following a guilty verdict  
if expert evidence is available  
if the defendant exhibits deviant behaviour during the  
trial  
never, only the defence may raise the issue

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 08-1-29

**Page-Reference:** 243

**Answer:** following a guilty verdict

30 Which of the following is *not* a scale included in the R-CRAS?

cognitive control  
behavioural control  
psychopathology  
current emotional state  
organicity

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 08-1-30

**Page-Reference:** 243

**Answer:** current emotional state

31 Which of the following refers to when the defendant is released into the community without restrictions to his or her behaviour?

parole  
absolute discharge  
conditional discharge  
provisional discharge  
limited discharge

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 08-1-31

**Page-Reference:** 243

**Answer:** absolute discharge

- 32 **Richard has been found not criminally responsible in regards to an assault on his landlord. The judge orders that he be released into the community, but that he is to stay away from his former landlord, not possess any weapons, and must take his medication. What type of disposition did Richard receive?**

psychiatric facility detention  
absolute discharge  
conditional discharge  
incarceration  
community sentence

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 08-1-32

**Page-Reference:** 244

**Answer:** conditional discharge

- 33 **Which of the following refers to the notion introduced through Bill C-30 where there is a maximum period of time a person with a mental illness could be affected by his or her disposition?**

limiting  
conditional discharge  
absolute discharge  
risk assessing  
capping

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:**  
08-1-3  
3

**Page-  
Reference:** 244

**Answer:**  
capping

34 **The introduction of *capping* in Bill C-30 was done to limit the extent to which mentally disordered persons:**

would be given indeterminate sentences.  
could delay trials due to unfitness.  
would be able to claim the insanity defence in successive crimes.  
could be granted absolute discharges for criminal activity.  
could mount an NCRMD defence for particular types of crimes.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:**  
08-1-3  
4

**Page-  
Reference:** 244

**Answer:** would be given indeterminate sentences.

35 **Research by Crocker, Braithwaite, Cote, Nicholls, and Seto (2011) found that review boards charged with assessing NCRMD cases relied more heavily on assessment of \_\_\_\_\_ factors to determine if the individual should be detained or released.**

psychotic  
static  
demographic  
dynamic  
employment

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

08-1-35

**Page-**

**Reference:**

245-246

**Answer:**

dynamic

36 The Canadian court case associated with defining the two types of automatism is:

*R. v. Stone*  
*R. v. Parks*  
*R. v. Swain*  
*R. v. McNaughton*  
*R. v. Kachkar*

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

08-1-36

**Page-**

**Reference:**

247

**Answer:** *R. v. Stone*

37 Which of the following examples would likely be recognized by Canadian courts as a defence of noninsane automatism?

stress  
excessive state of grief  
self-induced intoxication  
sleepwalking  
extreme state of anxiety

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:**  
08-1-3  
7

**Page-  
Reference:** 247

**Answer:**  
sleepwalking

38 **A successful noninsane automatism defence will result in a verdict of:**

not criminally responsible on account of mental disorder.  
not guilty and the defendant is released with no conditions.  
guilty with prison term.  
not guilty and the defendant is sent to a mental health facility.  
guilty with parole.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:**  
08-1-3  
8

**Page-  
Reference:** 247

**Answer:** not guilty and the defendant is released with no conditions.

39 **Earl stood trial for the murder of his neighbour. His lawyer argued that Earl was unaware of what he was doing because he was sleepwalking and in an automatic state. Earl's state was determined to be noninsane automatism. What type of verdict would Earl likely receive?**

not guilty  
guilty  
guilty but mentally ill  
NCRMD  
unfit to stand trial

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

08-1-39

**Page-Reference:**

247

**Answer:** not guilty

- 40 **Carla stood trial for the murder of her teacher. Her lawyer argued that Carla was unaware of what she was doing because she suffers from a dissociative disorder and operates "outside herself" at times. The judge ruled that Carla's state was a form of insane automatism. What type of verdict would Carla likely receive?**

not guilty  
guilty  
guilty but mentally ill  
NCRMD  
unfit to stand trial

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

08-1-40

**Page-Reference:**

248

**Answer:**  
NCRMD

- 41 **Which of the following circumstances would *not* be recognized by Canadian courts as a reason for a noninsane automatism state?**

sleepwalking  
low blood sugar  
voluntary intoxication  
carbon monoxide poisoning  
stroke

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 08-1-41

**Page-Reference:** 248

**Answer:** voluntary intoxication

- 42 You read a headline in your local paper that expresses "Man Found Innocent After Stabbing Coworker Before Lunch", and go on to read that the defendant suffered an extreme drop in blood sugar prior to committing the crime. This scenario provides an example of:

insane automatism  
NCRMD  
unfitness to stand trial  
noninsane automatism  
insanity

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 08-1-42

**Page-Reference:** 248

**Answer:** noninsane automatism

- 43 According to prevalence rates of psychiatric disorders in a sample of Canadian defendants (Bland et al., 1990), the majority defendants from the Edmonton Remand Centre were found to suffer from what type of psychiatric disorder?

an affective/mood disorder  
antisocial personality disorder  
substance abuse  
schizophrenia  
an anxiety disorder

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:**  
08-1-4  
3

**Page-  
Reference:** 250

**Answer:** substance  
abuse

**44 Which of the following statements is true regarding mentally ill offenders in Canada?**

Mentally ill offenders typically have more extensive criminal records than offenders without a mental illness.

Mentally ill offenders are more likely to recidivate (reoffend) compared to violent offenders without a mental illness.

Mentally ill offenders are significantly less likely to receive a conditional release from prison than offenders without a mental illness.

Mentally ill offenders are more likely to be conditionally released as a result of mandatory supervision, whereas offenders without a mental illness are more likely to receive a conditional release due to parole.

Individuals with a mental illness are less likely to plead guilty.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:**  
08-1-4  
4

**Page-  
Reference:** 252-25  
3

**Answer:** Mentally ill offenders are more likely to be conditionally released as a result of mandatory supervision, whereas offenders without a mental illness are more likely to receive a conditional release due to parole.

**45 According to your text, two of the greatest predictors of future violence in offenders**

schizophrenia and prior violence.  
prior violence and substance abuse.  
substance abuse and schizophrenia.  
major affective disorder and prior violence.  
schizophrenia and major affective disorder.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 08-1-4  
5

**Page-  
Reference:** 254

**Answer:** prior violence and substance  
abuse.

- 46 In a study by Rice and Harris (1990), defendants found not criminally responsible were compared to a matched group of convicted offenders. The researchers found that NCRMD defendants were more likely to have committed what type of crime compared to the other groups?

murder  
theft  
break and enter  
assault  
sexual assault

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 08-1-46

**Page-  
Reference:** 254

**Answer:**  
murder

- 47 In a meta-analysis by Phillips et al. (2005), these researchers examined whether demographic, criminal history, and clinical variables predict offending in mentally disordered offenders in the United Kingdom. The strongest predictor was:

mental disorder diagnosis.  
age on admission.  
number of days hospitalized.  
number of previous offences.  
age on release.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 08-1-4  
7

**Page-  
Reference:** 256

**Answer:** number of previous offences.

- 48 **The two key treatment options for mentally disordered offenders who experience symptoms such as hallucinations, suspicion, and noncompliance with medication are:**

self-paced therapy and behaviour therapy.  
self-paced therapy and drug therapy.  
antipsychotic drugs and behaviour therapy.  
psychodynamic therapy and behaviour therapy.  
drug therapy and psychodynamic therapy.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 08-1-48

**Page-  
Reference:** 256

**Answer:** antipsychotic drugs and behaviour therapy.

- 49 **The option by which mentally disordered offenders are placed directly into a treatment program rather than go through the court process is called:**

capping  
diversion  
prima facie  
conditional discharge  
absolute discharge

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 08-1-4  
9

**Page-  
Reference:** 257

**Answer:**  
diversion

50 Edward is a 34-year-old male who suffers from paranoid schizophrenia. He was detained in a forensic psychiatric facility following an NCRMD disposition that he was given. In the interests of integrating Edward back into the community, the review board has determined that he is no longer dangerous, and are going to allow him to live in the community, with the stipulation that he will agree to treatment or face detention if his condition deteriorates. The review board has granted Edward what type of treatment option?

conditional discharge  
diversion  
prima facie  
community treatment order  
absolute discharge

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 08-1-50

**Page-  
Reference:** 257

**Answer:** community treatment  
order

51 Which of the following is not one of the main objectives of mental health courts?

To ensure treatment for a defendant's mental disorders.  
To facilitate evaluation of a defendant's fitness to stand trial.  
To ensure that mentally disordered offenders are given a balance of treatment and punishment.  
To divert accused who have been charged with minor offences.  
To decrease the cycle of repeat offending in mentally disordered offenders.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 08-1-51

**Page-Reference:** 257

**Answer:** To ensure that mentally disordered offenders are given a balance of treatment and punishment.

52 **Recent research suggests that the public's perception of mental health courts is generally:**

negative  
positive  
ambivalent  
undecided  
dismissive

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 08-1-52

**Page-Reference:** 258

**Answer:** positive

**Chapter 08 Short Answer Questions**

1. **You have been hired by a Canadian lawyer to assess a defendant for competency to stand trial. As a first step, you have decided to conduct a competency screener. Describe the screener that you will use and justify your choice.**

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:**  
08-2-0  
1

**Page-Reference:** 232-23  
4

**Answer:** - Fitness Interview Test-Revised (FIT-R).

- The FIT-R was developed to meet the fitness criteria outlined in the Canadian Criminal Code.

- The FIT-R consists of a semi-structured interview.

- The FIT-R assesses three psychological abilities as outlined in the Code:

- a. understanding of the nature or object of the proceedings;
- b. understanding of the possible consequences of the proceedings; and
- c. ability to communicate with counsel.

Each response is rated on a 3-point scale, ranging from 0 (indicates no-to-little impairment) to 2 (indicates severe impairment). Once the interview is complete, the evaluator must make a decision regarding overall fitness. The final decision involves three stages: (1) determining the existence of a mental disorder, (2) determining the defendant's capacity regarding each of the three psychological abilities stated above, and (3) examining the previous information.

2. **What is the name of the current insanity defence in Canada? According to the Canadian Criminal Code, what are the criteria for insanity? Assuming you are the Crown prosecutor, identify two situations in which you may raise the issue of insanity.**

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:**  
08-2-0  
2

**Page-Reference:** 239-24  
3

**Answer:** - *Insanity defence*: Not criminally responsible on account of mental disorder (NCRMD).

- *Criteria for insanity*:

- a. Defendant must be suffering from a mental disorder;
  - b. Defendant must not be able to appreciate the nature and quality of the act (or omission) he/she committed.; and
  - c. Defendant must not know that what he/she did was wrong.
- The Crown can only raise the issue of insanity in the following two cases:
- a. Following a guilty verdict; and
  - b. Once the issue of insanity/mental illness has been brought up by the defence.

**3. Name two of the three changes to legislation resulting from Brian's Law (Bill 68).**

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:** 08-2-03

**Page-Reference:** 241-242

**Answer:** - Implementation of treatment orders that require people with mental illnesses living in the community report to a mental health caregiver on a regular basis.

- As a condition of being released from a mental health facility, those with mental illnesses may be forced to take prescription medication.
- If they refuse medication, they can be re-institutionalized.

**4. What are the three dispositions that can be made following a finding of NCRMD?**

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 08-2-04

**Page-Reference:** 243-245

- Answer:**
- a. Absolute discharge (release into community without restrictions on behaviour);
  - b. Conditional discharge (release into community with some restrictions on behaviour—e.g., cannot possess firearms); and
  - c. Custody order for detention in hospital/psychiatric facility.

5. In the context of a defendant found NCRMD, what are the four main criteria considered by courts and review boards when deciding a disposition? Explain the term *capping* and specify the consequence of capping for mentally ill offenders with respect to their dispositions.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:**  
08-2-0  
5

**Page-  
Reference:** 243-24  
5

**Answer:** - Criteria considered when deciding on a disposition:

- a. Public safety
- b. Mental state of the defendant
- c. Reintegration of the defendant into society
- d. Other needs of the defendant (e.g., treatment, etc.)

- *Capping*: refers to a maximum period of time that a person with a mental illness can be affected by their disposition.

- A consequence of capping is that the disposition period for a mentally ill offender cannot exceed the length of the prison term that would have been administered if he/she had received a standard guilty verdict.

6. What changes to how defendants found NCRMD are dealt with were proposed in Bill C-54 early in 2013?

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:**  
08-2-0  
6

**Page-  
Reference:** 246

**Answer:** - This Bill is directed to those who committed a serious offence and have a high likelihood of reoffending or if the act was so heinous that the public could be at risk. If this Bill passes as it currently is proposed, these "high risk" offenders would not be granted a conditional or absolute discharge.

7. Distinguish between noninsane automatism and insane automatism. Discuss what dispositions are associated with each, and what circumstances have been recognized by Canadian courts in cases of noninsane automatism.

**QuestionID:** 08-2-07

**Page-Reference:** 247-248

**Answer:** The Supreme Court of Canada stated that there were two forms of automatism: noninsane and insane. Noninsane automatism refers to involuntary behaviour that occurs because of an external factor. The verdict in such cases is "not guilty." Insane automatism refers to an involuntary action that occurs because of a mental disorder. In these cases, a finding of NCRMD would be entered and the legislation for NCRMD would be applied.

Canadian courts have recognized defences of noninsane automatism in the following circumstances:

- A physical blow (e.g., a blow to the head)
- Physical ailments, such as stroke
- Hypoglycemia (e.g., low blood sugar)
- Carbon monoxide poisoning
- Sleepwalking
- Involuntary intoxication
- Psychological blow from an extraordinary external event that might reasonably be expected to cause a dissociative state in an average, normal person

8. **Peter is on trial for sexual assault. He claims he was in a blackout state due to consumption of two bottles of whisky. Based on the information in your text on intoxication and automatism, what type of disposition would Peter most likely get from a judge and why?**

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 08-2-0  
8

**Page-Reference:** 249-25  
0

**Answer:** Use the case of *R. v. Daviault* (1994) as a comparison. In that case, the provincial judge found that the defendant committed the offence but, because of the level of intoxication, found that he did not have the intent to commit the act. Daviault was found not guilty. On appeal, the court reversed the judge's decision, entering a guilty verdict for Daviault. The appeal court stated that self-induced intoxication resulting in a state similar to automatism is not available as a defence for a general intent offence—that is, an offence that requires only an intention to commit the act. Moreover, in 1995 Bill C-72 was passed, which stated that intoxication was not recognized as a defence for violent crimes

9. **What are three explanations proposed by Bland et al. (1990) for the high rates of mental illness in offender populations in Canada?**

**Difficulty:** Moderat

**QuestionID:** 08-2-09

**Page-Reference:** 252

**Answer:** a. People with a mental illness are likely to be arrested at a disproportionately higher rate than those without a mental illness.  
b. People with a mental illness are less successful in the commission of a crime and are therefore more likely to get caught.  
c. People with a mental illness are more likely to plead guilty, perhaps due to lack of access to good legal representation or inability to understand the consequences of their plea.

10 **What are two of the three main findings from the meta-analysis conducted by Bonta, Blais, and Wilson (2014) regarding recidivism rates of offenders with mental disorders?**

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 08-2-10

**Page-Reference:** 255-256

**Answer:** - The average recidivism follow-up time (until someone followed up to see whether the offender had re-offended) was 4.9 years;  
- Having a mental disorder was not predictive of recidivism; and  
- Having psychosis is not a useful predictor of recidivism.

11 **What are the four main objectives of mental health courts?**

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 08-2-11

**Page-Reference:** 257

**Answer:** - To divert accused who have been charged with minor to moderately serious criminal offences and offer them an alternative;  
- To facilitate a defendant's fitness to stand trial evaluation;  
- To ensure treatment for a defendant's mental disorders; and



**Chapter 09: Sentencing and Parole in  
Canada**

**Chapter 09 Multiple Choice  
Questions**

1. Which of the following types of cases would *not* be heard at a provincial court?

traffic violations  
small claims  
first degree murder cases  
appeals from administrative tribunals  
both b and c

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

09-1-01

**Page-**

**Reference:**

263-265

**Answer:** first degree murder cases

2. A Canada Post employee has been charged with violating personal rights as he was opening and reading letters that were not addressed to him. This employee would be tried in what type of court?

Administrative Tribunal  
Gladue Court  
Provincial Superior Court  
Federal Court  
Tax Court of Canada

**Difficulty:**

Hard

**QuestionID:** 09-1-0  
2

**Page-  
Reference:** 264

**Answer:** Federal  
Court

3. **Which court is responsible for providing direction to the federal government on legal issues such as the interpretation of Canadian Constitutional Rights?**

Federal Administrative Tribunal  
Gladue Court  
Provincial Superior Court  
Federal Court of Appeal  
Supreme Court of Canada

**Difficulty:** Moderat  
e

**QuestionID:** 09-1-03

**Page-  
Reference:** 265

**Answer:** Supreme Court of  
Canada

4. **Which of the following is *not* a potential explanation for Aboriginal overrepresentation in the prison system?**

Aboriginal people commit more crimes than non-Aboriginal people.  
Compared to non-Aboriginal people, Aboriginal people commit crimes that are more likely to result in prison sentences.  
Aboriginal people have greater access to adequate legal representation compared to non-Aboriginal people.  
Aboriginal are more economically disadvantaged than non-Aboriginal people and thus are impacted more by criminal justice practices such as the use of fines.  
There is systemic racism in the criminal justice system, which negatively impacts Aboriginal people.

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 09-1-0  
4

**Page-Reference:** 265-26  
6

**Answer:** Aboriginal people have greater access to adequate legal representation compared to non-Aboriginal people.

**5. Which Supreme Court of Canada ruling instructed Canadian judges to pay special attention to the circumstances of Aboriginal offenders when making sentencing decisions?**

- R. v. Gladue*
- R. v. Oickle*
- R. v. Brown*
- R. v. L. T. H*
- R. v. Singh*

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 09-1-0  
5

**Page-Reference:** 266

**Answer:** *R. v. Gladue*

**6. Perreault (2009) reported that Aboriginal offenders were overrepresented in both custody and community-based correctional programs. Compared to the rate of Aboriginal persons in the Canadian population (about 3%), what was the approximate rate of Aboriginal people in the correctional population?**

- 10%
- 18%
- 26%
- 31%
- 40%

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 09-1-06

**Page-Reference:** 265

**Answer:**  
18%

**7. Which of the following would *not* be considered a Gladue factor in Aboriginal Courts?**

- attendance at a residential school
- lack of employment
- substance abuse
- strong cultural identification
- exposure to abuse

**Difficulty:**  
Moderate

**QuestionID:** 09-1-07

**Page-Reference:** 266

**Answer:** strong cultural identification

**8. Restorative justice refers to:**

- An approach that focuses on restoring the balance between right and wrong-doing and employs harsh punishment techniques.
- An approach that emphasizes access to rehabilitation resources while offenders are in prison to minimize future offending.
- An approach used to heal those affected by the criminal act (victims, offenders, and community).
- An approach that recognizes that life factors need to be addressed throughout corrections in order to restore a person to a law-abiding citizen.
- An approach that employs a mandatory program in prison called "recover and restore" to address offender remorse, reparations, and positive behavioural changes.

**Difficulty:**  
Moderate

**QuestionID:** 09-1-08

**Page-Reference:** 266

**Answer:** An approach used to heal those affected by the criminal act (victims, offenders, and community).

9. **Sentencing an offender with the goal of reducing the probability that members of the community will violate the law is known as:**

- restorative justice
- reparative justice
- specific deterrence
- systematic disparity
- general deterrence

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 09-1-09

**Page-Reference:** 267

**Answer:** general deterrence

10 **According to your textbook, which of the following is *not* a goal of sentencing in Canada?**

- providing reparations to victims
- denouncing the act to society
- aiding in the rehabilitation of the offender
- ensuring that retribution is achieved
- promoting a sense of responsibility in offenders

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 09-1-10

**Page-Reference:** 267, 269

**Answer:** ensuring that retribution is achieved

11 Which of the following statements is *incorrect* with regard to sentencing in Canada?

The fundamental principle of sentencing indicates that more serious offences should receive more serious sentences.

Sentencing goals can be incompatible with one another.

Judges sometimes rely on extra-legal factors when handing down sentences.

Judges must select one specific goal they hope to achieve when handing down a sentence.

Monetary fines are the most common sentencing options used in Canada.

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:** 09-1-11

**Page-Reference:** 269

**Answer:** Judges must select one specific goal they hope to achieve when handing down a sentence.

12 The Canadian Criminal Code outlines several principles of sentencing. Which of the following is *not* included in these principles?

Sentences should be adjusted to account for relevant aggravating circumstances.

Sentences should be adjusted to account for relevant mitigating circumstances.

Judges should consider multiple goals when handing down sentences.

Where consecutive sentences are imposed, the combined sentence should not be unduly harsh.

If possible, sentences other than imprisonment should be considered.

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:** 09-1-12

**Page-Reference:** 270

**Answer:** Judges should consider multiple goals when handing down sentences.

13 **One of Canada's newest sentencing options, introduced in 1996, allows offenders to serve their sentence in the community. This option is referred to as:**

- restitution
- an absolute discharge
- a conditional discharge
- specific deterrence
- a conditional sentence

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:** 09-1-13

**Page-Reference:** 270-271

**Answer:** a conditional sentence

14 **A convicted offender sentenced to three years in prison is likely to be placed in:**

- a federal penitentiary
- a maximum security penitentiary
- a territorial prison
- a provincial prison
- a house-arrest situation

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:** 09-1-14

**Page-Reference:** 271

**Answer:** a federal penitentiary

15 **James was just convicted of breaking and entering in an Ontario court. The judge sentenced James to 18 months in jail. James serve out his sentence in:**

a federal penitentiary  
a maximum security penitentiary  
a territorial prison  
a provincial prison  
his home

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

09-1-15

**Page-Reference:**

271

**Answer:** a provincial prison

- 16 **Tommy is hospitalized due to injuries sustained from a car accident, which was caused by an inattentive driver. The judge requires that the driver pay for Tommy's medical bills incurred as a result of the accident. This particular sentence is known as:**

a conditional discharge  
a conditional sentence  
a fine  
restitution  
suspended sentence

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

09-1-16

**Page-Reference:**

271

**Answer:** restitution

- 17 **Which of the following is *not* one of the "creative" sentencing options discussed in your text that have been handed down by judges in the United States?**

wearing chicken suits  
new age anger management classes  
unpaid work for a septic company  
listening to classical music  
males dressing as women

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 09-1-17

**Page-Reference:** 272 [Box 9.2]

**Answer:** unpaid work for a septic company

18 **Research has demonstrated that the greatest variation in sentencing is accounted for more by \_\_\_\_\_ than the actual facts of the case.**

information about the judge  
the defendant's gender  
victim characteristics  
the defendant's race  
the way the lawyers present the case

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 09-1-18

**Page-Reference:** 272

**Answer:** information about the judge

19 **According to Canadian researchers, one of the most important problems with sentencing at the moment is:**

high rates of offender recidivism even when harsh sentences are administered.  
sentencing disparity.  
prison overcrowding.  
a lack of adequate research on sentencing in Canada.  
the fact that the criminal justice system tends to hand down sentences that are too lenient.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 09-1-19

**Page-Reference:** 273

**Answer:** sentencing disparity.

20 **According to McFatter (1986), the two major sources of unwarranted sentencing disparity are:**

extra-legal disparity and intra-legal disparity.  
systematic disparity and unsystematic disparity.  
justifiable disparity and unjustifiable disparity.  
general disparity and specific disparity.  
coherent disparity and incoherent disparity.

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 09-1-20

**Page-Reference:** 273

**Answer:** systematic disparity and unsystematic disparity.

21 **Judge Jonas has heard three cases of breaking and entering today, all involving similar offenders and similar circumstances. In the first case, he handed down a sentence of 3 months, in the second case a sentence of 2 years, and in the third case a sentence of 8 months. Judge Jonas' behaviour reflects what type of sentencing disparity?**

Extra-legal disparity  
Systematic disparity  
Unsystematic disparity  
Generalized disparity  
Intra-legal disparity

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 09-1-21

**Page-Reference:** 273

**Answer:** Unsystematic disparity

**22 Which of the following is a source of systematic sentencing disparity?**

personality differences across judges  
a judge's mood fluctuations  
a judge's level of fatigue  
the age of the judge  
the gender of the judge

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 09-1-22

**Page-Reference:** 273

**Answer:** personality differences across judges

**23 Judge Ingles just sentenced a young male defendant to 5 years in prison for sexual assaulting his girlfriend. In another similar case of date rape, Judge Faberson sentenced the young male defendant to 10 years in prison. In yet another sexual assault case between a young male defendant and his female roommate, Judge Percy handed down a sentence of 12 years. These discrepancies in sentencing reflect what type of sentencing disparity?**

extra-legal disparity  
systematic disparity  
unsystematic disparity  
generalized disparity  
intra-legal disparity

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

09-1-23

**Page-Reference:**

273

**Answer:** systematic disparity

24 **What is the most common procedure used to study sentencing disparity?**

field studies  
archival studies  
simulation studies  
use of official sentencing statistics  
correlational analysis

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

09-1-24

**Page-Reference:**

274

**Answer:** simulation studies

25 **Which of the following statements is true regarding sentencing disparity in Canada?**

So far, no methods have been proposed to reduce sentencing disparity.  
Sentencing disparity ultimately exists because judges are allowed a great deal of discretion when making sentencing decisions.  
Laboratory-based studies do not show evidence of sentencing disparity.  
Official statistics cannot be used to study sentencing disparity in Canada.  
Field studies have largely been ineffective in studying disparity.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 09-1-25

**Page-Reference:** 274

**Answer:** Sentencing disparity ultimately exists because judges are allowed a great deal of discretion when making sentencing decisions.

- 26 In a study of Canadian provincial court judges by Palys and Divorski (1986), each judge participant was provided with 5 different criminal cases (and surrounding information). The judges were asked to impose a sentence for each offender and indicate what facts they considered relevant in their decision-making (i.e., legal objectives, case facts, and demographic information). What component of the judge's decision-making was the most important predictor of sentencing severity?

differential weighting of legal objectives  
over-consideration of the race of the defendant  
selective attention to facts only the judge considered relevant  
inconsistent or unclear case facts  
an interaction between the gender of the defendant and the type of crime

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 09-1-26

**Page-Reference:** 274

**Answer:** differential weighting of legal objectives

- 27 Sentencing guidelines, such as mandatory minimum sentences and starting point sentences, have been utilized to:

promote rehabilitation rather than incarceration.  
"crack down" on crime by increasing sentence severity.  
increase leniency towards offenders with mitigating circumstances.  
reduce sentencing disparity between and within judges.  
provide juries with better instructions on how they should sentence offenders.

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 09-1-2  
7

**Page-  
Reference:** 275

**Answer:** reduce sentencing disparity between and within judges.

28 **The notion of 'starting point sentences' emerged out of which ruling by the Supreme Court of Canada?**

*R. v. Arcand*  
*R. v. Gladue*  
*R v. Hoillett*  
*R. v. Singh*  
*R. v. Oickle*

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 09-1-28

**Page-  
Reference:** 277 [Box  
9.3]

**Answer:** *R. v. Arcand*

29 **For offences included in the Canadian Criminal Code, the death penalty was formally abolished in:**

1945  
1962  
1976  
1985  
1999

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 09-1-29

**Page-Reference:** 278 [Box  
9.4]

**Answer:**  
1976

30 **Which of the following statements is/are true regarding the death penalty in Canada?**

A 2013 opinion poll indicated that the majority of Canadians are in favour of reinstating the death penalty for murder.  
Research suggests that the death penalty should not be reinstated if the purpose of it is to reduce crime.  
The murder rate in Canada has generally declined since the death penalty was abolished.  
It is rare for convicted murderers in Canada to commit another murder upon release from prison.  
All of the above

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 09-1-30

**Page-Reference:** 278 [Box  
9.4]

**Answer:** All of the  
above

31 **According to the study by Gendreau et al. (2001), which examined the effectiveness of community-based sanctions and incarceration, the only two sanctions that were found to decrease recidivism were:**

prison and electronic monitoring.  
restitution and supervision programs.  
fines and electronic monitoring.  
restitution and fines.  
prison and supervision programs.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 09-1-3  
1

**Page-  
Reference:** 278-27  
9

**Answer:** restitution and  
fines.

32 **According to your textbook, which of the following is an example of a criminogenic need?**

an offender's self-esteem  
childhood sexual abuse  
age at first offence  
socioeconomic status  
antisocial attitudes

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 09-1-32

**Page-  
Reference:** 279

**Answer:** antisocial  
attitudes

33 **Johnny is a low-risk offender. According to the risk principle, what is likely to happen if he is exposed to very intense prison-based interventions?**

His risk of recidivism is likely to decrease dramatically.  
His risk of recidivism is likely to decrease slightly.  
His risk of recidivism is likely to remain the same.  
His risk of recidivism is likely to increase.  
He will definitely reoffend upon release from prison.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 09-1-33

**Page-Reference:** 279-280

**Answer:** His risk of recidivism is likely to increase.

34 **Rob is illiterate and English is his second language. When he is sentenced to incarceration, he is given treatment that requires him to read treatment-related books written in English before each of his counselling sessions. This is a violation of the \_\_\_\_\_ principle of effective correctional treatment?**

need  
risk  
responsivity  
rehabilitative  
specificity

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 09-1-34

**Page-Reference:** 279

**Answer:** responsivity

35 **\_\_\_\_\_ their research on the responsivity principle, Andrews and Bonta (2010) suggested that \_\_\_\_\_ interventions are likely to be most useful with offenders.**

psychodynamic  
"scared straight"  
humanistic  
emotion-based  
cognitive-behavioural

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:**  
09-1-3  
5

**Page-  
Reference:** 279

**Answer:** cognitive-  
behavioural

36 **One example of an inappropriate intervention would be:**

psychodynamic strategies  
role-playing  
behavioural modelling  
rehearsal  
reinforcement

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:**  
09-1-3  
6

**Page-  
Reference:** 279-28  
0

**Answer:** psychodynamic  
strategies

37 **In 1899, Sir Wilfrid Laurier was responsible for the introduction of \_\_\_\_\_ in Canada.**

parole  
probation  
conditional sentencing  
restitution  
imprisonment

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 09-1-3  
7

**Page-Reference:** 280

**Answer:**  
parole

38 **Parole involves all of the following principles, except:**

- an attempt to rehabilitate offenders so they can become productive contributors to society.
- to reduce sentences imposed by the courts.
- a high degree of community supervision to ensure the parolee is abiding by certain rules.
- the conditional release of offenders into a community.
- a clause that revokes parole if conditions are not complied with.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 09-1-38

**Page-Reference:** 280

**Answer:** to reduce sentences imposed by the courts.

39 **Which of the following statements is true concerning parole in Canada?**

Most offenders released on parole are convicted of new crimes.  
Parole reduces the sentence imposed by the courts.  
An offender's expression of remorse is the most important factor taken into account when decisions are made about parole.  
The National Parole Board denies full parole to over half of offenders at their first parole review date.  
Victims do not have role in the parole process.

**Difficulty:** Moderate  
**QuestionID:** 09-1-39  
**Page-Reference:** 283

**Answer:** The National Parole Board denies full parole to over half of offenders at their first parole review date.

40 **Mason was convicted of assault with a weapon, and has served a portion of his time in jail. He is being granted statutory release, meaning that he has served \_\_\_\_\_ of his sentence.**

one-quarter  
one-third  
half  
two-thirds  
three-quarters

**Difficulty:** Moderate  
**QuestionID:** 09-1-40  
**Page-Reference:** 282

**Answer:** two-thirds

41 **Sylvia has served the first third of her sentence for assaulting her husband. What is the highest level of parole that she is now eligible for?**

statutory release  
day parole  
full parole  
temporary absence  
warrant expiry

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

09-1-41

**Page-Reference:**

281

**Answer:** full parole

42 **Russell was given a 9-year sentence for attacking a co-worker with a knife. His sentence commenced in 2013. In 2019, Russell will be eligible for what type of parole?**

statutory release  
day parole  
full parole  
temporary absence  
warrant expiry

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

09-1-42

**Page-Reference:**

282

**Answer:** statutory release

43 **Which of the following is *not* one of the myths surrounding parole in Canada?**

Parole reduces sentences imposed by the courts.  
Parole is automatically granted when an inmate becomes eligible for parole consideration.  
The PBC grants parole to offenders who express remorse for the offences they have committed.  
Most of the offenders released on parole are convicted of new crimes.  
Victims play a key role in the parole process, and their views concerning personal and public safety are considered.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 09-1-43

**Page-Reference:** 283

**Answer:** Victims play a key role in the parole process, and their views concerning personal and public safety are considered.

44 **When making a decision about whether to grant an offender parole, the National Parole Board takes into account:**

opinions from police officers  
the offender's mental status  
the offender's employment history  
information from victims  
all of the above

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 09-1-44

**Page-Reference:** 282

**Answer:** all of the above

45 **The first type of release an offender is typically granted is:**

day parole  
full parole  
statutory release  
temporary absence  
partial parole

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 09-1-4  
5

**Page-  
Reference:** 281

**Answer:** temporary  
absence

46 **By law, most federal inmates must be granted \_\_\_\_\_ after serving \_\_\_\_\_ of their sentence.**

temporary absence, one-third  
temporary absence, half  
statutory release, two-thirds  
statutory release, three-quarters  
day parole, one-fourth

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 09-1-46

**Page-  
Reference:** 282

**Answer:** statutory release, two-thirds

47 **Generally, offenders granted \_\_\_\_\_ are less likely to breach their parole conditions than those granted \_\_\_\_\_.**

statutory release, full parole  
statutory release, day parole  
statutory release, temporary absence  
day parole, statutory release  
full parole, temporary absence

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 09-1-47

**Page-Reference:** 286

**Answer:** day parole, statutory release

- 48 **Dr. Serin and colleagues developed an empirically-based framework for making parole decisions that has been adopted by the Parole Board of Canada. Research on the use of this framework has revealed that:**

higher rates of decision errors have occurred due to confusion over the model.  
lower rates of decision errors have occurred across a range of situations.  
lower rates of decision errors have occurred, but only for Aboriginal offenders.  
higher rates of decision errors have occurred for special inmate populations (Aboriginal, youth, women) but errors have been reduced for the remainder of inmates.  
use of this model does not result in significant differences when compared to traditional (unstructured) parole decision-making.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 09-1-48

**Page-Reference:** 285

**Answer:** lower rates of decision errors have occurred across a range of situations.

- 49 **The most recent Performance Monitoring Report (2014) showed that success rates for federal offenders on all types of conditional release has:**

increased since 2009.  
decreased since 2009.  
been relatively stable since 2009.  
decreased from 2009 to 2011, but has increased since 2012.  
increased from 2009 to 2012, and then dropped dramatically afterwards.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:**  
09-1-4  
9

**Page-  
Reference:** 286

**Answer:** been relatively stable since 2009.

50 **The most recent Performance Monitoring Report (2014) showed that breach of condition rates for federal offenders on all types of conditional release has:**

increased since 2009.  
decreased since 2009.  
decreased dramatically between 2009 to 2011, but has increased since 2012.  
been relatively stable since 2009.  
increased substantially from 2009 to 2011, and then stabilized.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:**  
09-1-5  
0

**Page-  
Reference:** 286

**Answer:** been relatively stable since 2009.

51 **Data from the Parole Board of Canada indicates that most of the failures experienced by offenders on parole (and statutory release) are due to \_\_\_\_\_ rather than \_\_\_\_\_.**

antisocial peers, breach of conditions  
commission of new offences, breach of conditions  
breach of conditions, commission of new offences  
breach of conditions, antisocial attitudes and lifestyle  
drug and substance abuse, breach of conditions

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 09-1-51

**Page-Reference:** 286-287

**Answer:** breach of conditions, commission of new offences

**52 The most recent Performance Monitoring Report (2014) showed that offence rates for federal offenders on all types of conditional release has:**

been decreasing slowly since 2009.  
been increasing slowly since 2009.  
been increasing dramatically since 2009.  
been decreasing dramatically for 2 years and then increasing for 3 years.  
been increasing for 3 years but levelled off afterwards.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 09-1-52

**Page-Reference:** 287

**Answer:** been decreasing slowly since 2009.

## Chapter 09 Short Answer Questions

1. **What is the Aboriginal overrepresentation problem in Canadian corrections? What factors contribute to this overrepresentation, and what measures have been taken in Canada to reduce this problem?**

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 09-2-01

**Page-Reference:** 265-267

**Answer:** - The most important issue that needs to be discussed here is the disproportionate involvement of Aboriginals in the Canadian criminal justice system, or the **Aboriginal overrepresentation** problem. For example, according to 2006 census data, Aboriginal people make up about 3% of the general population in Canada. However, in 2007-2008, Aboriginal adults were greatly overrepresented in both custody and community-based correctional programs at rates of about 17.5% (Perreault, 2009).

- Contributing factors include: Aboriginal persons may commit more crimes, their crimes are more likely to result in incarceration, they are processed differently by the criminal justice system, certain policies have adverse effects on disadvantaged populations such as Aboriginals

- Reducing the problem has involved the development of Gladue or Aboriginal courts, that are deemed to take into account factors relevant to Aboriginal offending when handing down sentences, use of restorative justice approaches and alternate forms of imprisonment such as Healing Lodges.

2. **Many purposes of sentencing exist, including specific and general deterrence. State four additional purposes of sentencing.**

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 09-2-02

**Page-Reference:** 267-269

**Answer:** - to denounce unlawful conduct  
- to separate offenders from society  
- to assist in rehabilitating offenders  
- to provide reparations for harm done to victims or the community  
- to promote a sense of responsibility in offenders

3. **State the fundamental principle of sentencing as defined in Canada's Criminal Code. In addition,**

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 09-2-03

**Page-Reference:** 270

**Answer:** - *Fundamental principle of sentencing:* a sentence must be proportionate to the gravity of the offence and the degree of responsibility of the offender.

- Additional principles:

- a. A sentence should be adjusted to account for any aggravating or mitigating circumstances.
- b. A sentence should be similar for offenders committing similar types of crimes under similar circumstances.
- c. When consecutive sentences are imposed, the combined sentence should not be unduly harsh.
- d. An offender should not be deprived of liberty (i.e., imprisoned) if less restrictive sanctions are appropriate.
- e. Wherever reasonable, sanctions other than imprisonment should be considered for all offenders.

**4. List and describe the five main sentencing options utilized in Canada.**

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 09-2-04

**Page-Reference:** 270-271

**Answer: Absolute or conditional discharge.** If it is in the best interest of the offender and the community a judge in Canada can use discharges. If an offender is given an absolute discharge, that person is found guilty, but will not be convicted and will have no criminal record. An offender who is given a conditional discharge is essentially on probation and will have to follow certain rules in the community for a specified period of time. If the probation period is completed successfully their discharge will become absolute and their criminal record will be clean, but if the offender breaches their conditions they could be sanctioned.

**Restitution.** Restitution is a payment made by an offender to the victim to cover expenses resulting from a crime, such as monetary loss resulting from property damage or expenses incurred due to injuries.

**Fines and community service.** A fine requires that the offender pay money to the court. When a judge fines an offender he or she will set the amount of the fine, the way the fine is to be paid, and the time by which the fine must be paid. In some cases, the offender will be able to pay off the fine by performing community service. If an offender does not pay a fine he or she can serve a term of imprisonment.

**Conditional sentence.** A conditional sentence is a prison sentence served in the community, which requires the offender to follow a set of rules for a specific period of time. If the offender abides by these rules, their prison sentence is suspended, but if the offender breaks these rules, he or she may be required to serve the remainder of their sentence in prison.

5. **What is unwarranted sentencing disparity? List and describe the two major sources of unwarranted sentencing disparity.**

**Difficulty:** Moderate  
**QuestionID:** 09-2-05  
**Page-Reference:** 273

**Answer:** - *Unwarranted sentencing disparity*: involves variations in sentencing severity for similar crimes committed under similar circumstances that result from reliance by the judge on legally irrelevant factors  
- The two types of unwarranted sentencing disparity are:  
*a. Systematic disparity*: consistent disagreement among judges about sentencing decisions due to factors such as how lenient the judge thinks the sentence should be (e.g., due to personality, philosophy, or experience)  
*b. Unsystematic disparity*: inconsistencies within a judge about sentencing decisions when judging the same type of offender or crime at different points in time (e.g., due to the judge's mood, focusing on irrelevant facts, or the way in which the facts of the case are interpreted by the judge on any particular day)

6. **Define the need principle, risk principle, and responsivity principle.**

**Difficulty:** Moderate  
**QuestionID:** 09-2-06  
**Page-Reference:** 279

**Answer:** - *Need principle*: To increase effectiveness, treatment should target factors known to be related to reoffending (i.e., criminogenic needs, such as antisocial attitudes).  
- *Risk principle*: To increase effectiveness, treatment should focus on those offenders that show high risk of reoffending.  
- *Responsivity principle*: To increase effectiveness, treatment should match the general learning style, motivations, abilities, personality, etc. of the offender being targeted.

7. **List and describe the four major types of parole in Canada.**

QuestionID: 09-2-07

Page-  
Reference: 280-282

**Answer:** 1) **Temporary Absence** A **temporary absence** is "usually the first type of release an offender will be granted" (PBC, 2013b). Offenders may be granted unescorted or escorted temporary absences (unescorted absences would typically follow successful escorted absences) so that they can take part in activities such as substance abuse programs, family violence counseling, and technical training courses

2) **Day Parole** **Day parole** allows offenders to participate in activities within the community (e.g., work). Offenders on day parole must typically return to their institution or halfway house at the end of the day (PBC, 2013b). Performance on day parole is considered when the PBC reviews an offender's application for full parole.

3) **Full Parole** **Full parole** allows offenders to serve the remainder of their sentence in the community. Before an offender is granted full parole, a thorough assessment is done to predict the likelihood of reoffending, as described below (PBC, 2013b). Consideration is also given to what conditions should be implemented to address the chance of risk. To be granted full parole, offenders must usually have been granted (and must have successfully completed) unescorted temporary absences and day parole. The offender is closely supervised while on full parole

4) **Statutory Release** Most federal inmates must be released with supervision, by law, after serving two-thirds of their sentence. This is known as **statutory release** (PBC, 2013b). (Offenders serving life, however, are not eligible for statutory release.) As with full parole, an assessment is carried out to predict the likelihood of reoffending and consideration is given as to what conditions should be implemented to address the chance of risk.

8. **Provide at least six of the factors that are available to be considered when the Parole Board of Canada assesses risk and parole options.**

Difficulty: Moderate

QuestionID: 09-2-08

Page-  
Reference: 282

**Answer:** - Statistical measures of an offender's risk to reoffend

- The offender's criminal history
- Social problems experienced by the offender, such as drug use and family violence
- The offender's mental status
- Information about the offender's relationships and employment history
- Psychological or psychiatric reports
- The offender's institutional behaviour
- Opinions from other professionals, such as police officers
- Information from victims
- Information that indicates evidence of change and insight into the offender's own behaviour
- Benefits derived from treatment that may reduce the risk posed by the offender
- Performance on earlier releases
- Any other information indicating whether release would pose a risk to society
- The feasibility of the offender's release plans

9. **Discuss the difference in success rates and parole failures between (a) offenders released on day**

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 09-2-0  
9

**Page-  
Reference:** 285-28  
7

**Answer:** Federal offenders who are granted parole based on an assessment of their risk of reoffending are more likely to complete their supervision period in the community compared with offenders released as a result of statute-based systems.

Of course, this is not to say that offenders granted day or full parole never breach the conditions of their paroles or commit further crimes—just that this tends to be the exception rather than the rule.

Research has indicated that during the period 2007 to 2012, offenders who were granted day or full parole were more successful compared to those granted statutory; however, even in the case of statutory release, the majority of offenders are successful. Success rates also seem to be improving for each group over time, albeit only slightly. Importantly, most of the failures experienced by offenders on parole (and statutory release) are due to breach of conditions rather than the commission of new offences (PBC, 2012). Indeed, relatively few offenders go on to commit additional crimes upon their release.

**Chapter 10: Risk Assessment**

**Chapter 10 Multiple Choice Questions**

1. Prior to the 1990s, a person's risk of violence was viewed as a \_\_\_\_\_. Today, it is viewed as a \_\_\_\_\_.

scale, three-dimensional rating  
dichotomy, range  
three-dimensional rating, scale  
range, dichotomy  
dynamic, static

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 10-1-0  
1

**Page-Reference:** 290

**Answer:** dichotomy,  
range

2. Currently, what is a primary objective of violence risk assessment?

To estimate the likelihood that someone will commit a future act of violence.  
To determine whether an offender is fit to stand trial.  
To determine whether an offender is not criminally responsible on account of mental disorder.  
To develop causal explanations of criminality and violence.  
To determine whether a defence of automatism is plausible.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 10-1-02

**Page-Reference:** 290

**Answer:** To estimate the likelihood that someone will commit a future act of violence.

**3. Which of the following civil contexts might require a risk assessment?**

- A teenager emails her teacher about bringing a gun to school.
- A father claims his ex-wife is an abusive mother and he should have sole custody of their children.
- A depressed patient tells his therapist he wants to hurt his ex-girlfriend.
- A person with a history of terrorist activities applies to immigrate to Canada.
- All of the above.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 10-1-03

**Page-Reference:** 291

**Answer:** All of the above.

**4. If a mental health patient makes a specific threat against another person (i.e., "I'm going to stab my roommate Sandra the next time she wakes me up in the middle of the night with her partying"), mental health professionals are expected to intervene to prevent such behaviour. This responsibility is called:**

- the person protection act
- civil commitment
- duty to warn
- unstructured clinical judgment
- actuarial prediction

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 10-1-04

**Page-Reference:** 291

**Answer:** duty to warn

5. **When might an offender risk assessment take place?**

- during sentencing
- when deciding whether a youth should be sent to secure custody
- pretrial
- when deciding whether an inmate should be released on parole
- all of the above

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 10-1-05

**Page-Reference:** 292

**Answer:** all of the above

6. **Based on the *Smith v. Jones* (1999) case, the Supreme Court ruled that doctor-patient confidentiality could be set aside if the following was present:**

- a past history of repeated serious personal injury offenses.
- clear, serious, and imminent danger of serious personal injury.
- if the patient discloses he/she has been sexually abused as a child.
- a past history of engaging in serious personal injury offences and vague threats of engaging in future violence.
- has been detained to warrant expiry in a prison and is a high-risk for future violence.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 10-1-06

**Page-Reference:** 292

**Answer:** clear, serious, and imminent danger of serious personal injury.

7. In 1977, \_\_\_\_\_ was enacted, which required mental health professionals to provide an assessment of risk for violence.

habitual criminal legislation  
chronic offender legislation  
dangerous offender legislation  
long-term offender legislation  
violent offender legislation

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 10-1-07

**Page-Reference:** 292

**Answer:** dangerous offender legislation

8. A court decision mandated the release of 400 forensic psychiatric patients into the community. The clinical staff rated all these patients as being "dangerous" if released into the community. Researchers have conducted a three-year follow-up study on these 400 patients. Of the 400, 100 were arrested for committing another violent offence. You should conclude the following from this finding:

The percentage of false positives is 25%.  
The correct classification rate was 50%.  
None of the forensic psychiatric patients should have been released.  
The false positive level is 75%.  
The percentage of false negatives is 20%.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 10-1-08

**Page-Reference:** 293

**Answer:** The false positive level is 75%.

9. In predicting violent acts, a \_\_\_\_\_ is an incorrect prediction in which a person is predicted to be nonviolent but acts violently.

- false positive
- base rate
- true positive
- false negative
- true negative

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 10-1-09

**Page-Reference:** 293

**Answer:** false negative

10 In predicting violent acts, a \_\_\_\_\_ is an incorrect prediction in which a person is predicted to be violent but does not act violently.

- false positive
- base rate
- true positive
- false negative
- true negative

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 10-1-10

**Page-Reference:** 293

**Answer:** false

11 Which of the following statements is true regarding prediction outcomes in the context of risk assessment?

Decreasing the number of false positive errors results in an increase in the number of false negative errors.

A false negative error has negative implications for the person being assessed.

When trying to predict events that have low base rates, false negative errors tend to occur most frequently.

The base rate of conditional release violations is very low.

False positive and false negative errors are not dependent on each other.

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

10-1-11

**Page-**

293

**Reference:**

**Answer:** Decreasing the number of false positive errors results in an increase in the number of false negative errors.

12 Trevor was a first-time offender serving a sentence for assault. When given a risk assessment, he was classified at a low risk to reoffend, and the parole board believed he would not offend again and was released. Three months later, Trevor was arrested and convicted of committing another assault, this time more violent. What type of prediction outcome does this scenario reflect?

true negative  
false negative  
true positive  
false positive  
base rate

**Difficulty:**

Hard

**QuestionID:**

10-1-12

**Page-**

293

**Reference:**

**Answer:** false negative

- 13 **Concern over school shootings has led to the assessment of many youths and attempts to predict which youths will be potential shooters. The problem is that many of these youths will be wrongly classified as potential shooters because we overestimate the prevalence of school shooting incidents. This example reflects:**

true negatives  
false negatives  
true positives  
false positives  
the base rate problem

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:** 10-1-13

**Page-Reference:** 294

**Answer:** the base rate problem

- 14 **Which of the following civil rights cases was significant in calling into question the accuracy of mental health professionals in predicting violence?**

*Barefoot v. Estelle*  
*Currie v. United States*  
*W. v. Egdell*  
*Baxstrom v. Herald*  
*Smith v. Jones*

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:** 10-1-14

**Page-Reference:** 295

**Answer:** *Baxstrom v. Herald*

- 15 **Which of the following is a methodological weakness of risk assessment and related research?**

The sample available for evaluating a risk assessment instrument is typically low risk.  
The number of risk factors being studied is limited.  
The use of official records in this type of research tends to underestimate the actual number of violent crimes committed.  
The definition of the criterion variable is too restricted.  
All of the above.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 10-1-15

**Page-Reference:** 296-297

**Answer:** All of the above.

16 A possible decision error made by clinicians in which it is believed that a correlation exists between two events that are in fact unrelated or correlated to a lesser degree is defined as:

- a false negative
- an illusory correlation
- a base rate
- a relation error
- a threat/control override

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 10-1-16

**Page-Reference:** 297

**Answer:** an illusory correlation

17 According to a study by Desmarais et al. (2010), what is the association between clinicians' confidence and accuracy in predicting short-term in-patient violence?

There is a small relationship between confidence and accuracy.  
There is a strong relationship between confidence and accuracy.  
As confidence increases, accuracy decreases.  
The results from this study suggest that clinicians tend not to have an overconfidence bias.  
Most clinicians rated their confidence as very low.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 10-1-17

**Page-Reference:** 298

**Answer:** There is a small relationship between confidence and accuracy.

18 **One advantage of using the unstructured clinical judgment approach to assess risk of violence is \_\_\_\_\_, whereas one disadvantage is \_\_\_\_\_.**

it is idiographic, it is nomothetic  
it lacks consistency, it lacks transparency  
it is flexible, it is subjective  
it is accurate, it is idiographic  
it is nomothetic, it lacks consistency

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 10-1-18

**Page-Reference:** 298

**Answer:** it is flexible, it is subjective

19 **Which method of risk assessment bases decisions on predetermined risk factors that are statistically and empirically related with a specific outcome?**

actuarial prediction  
correlational assessment  
structured professional judgment  
unstructured clinical judgment  
static prediction

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 10-1-1  
9

**Page-  
Reference:** 298

**Answer:** actuarial  
prediction

20 **Dr. James Grigson was a psychiatrist known to use a(n) \_\_\_\_\_ approach to risk assessment.**

unstructured clinical judgment  
structured professional judgment  
actuarial  
anamnestic  
risk factor

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 10-1-20

**Page-  
Reference:** 299

**Answer:** unstructured clinical  
judgment

21 **Which of the following refers to decisions that are guided by a predetermined list of risk factors that have been selected from the research and professional literature and judgment of risk level is based on the evaluator's professional judgment?**

structured actuarial-clinical prediction  
clinical predictionc. actuarial prediction  
structured professional judgment  
unstructured professional judgment

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 10-1-21

**Page-Reference:** 300

**Answer:** unstructured professional judgment

22 Which of the following risk assessment methods include all of the components identified by Skeem and Monahan (2011)?

unstructured clinical judgment  
actuarial  
structured professional judgment  
unstructured professional judgment  
static-dynamic continuum

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 10-1-22

**Page-Reference:** 300

**Answer:** actuarial

23 Which of the following characteristics is *not* associated with structured professional judgment?

It may include both static and dynamic risk factors.  
A person's ultimate risk level is determined by specific cut-off scores.  
It is guided by predetermined list of risk factors.  
It may be conducted by law enforcement officers.  
It is supported by Canadian researchers.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 10-1-23

**Page-Reference:** 300

**Answer:** A person's ultimate risk level is determined by specific cut-off scores.

24 **Level of intoxication is an example of a \_\_\_\_\_ risk factor, whereas age of onset of antisocial behaviour is an example of a \_\_\_\_\_ risk factor.**

dynamic, clinical  
static, dynamic  
criminogenic, dispositional  
dynamic, static  
contextual, clinical

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 10-1-24

**Page-Reference:** 301

**Answer:** dynamic, static

25 **Which of the following refers to risk factors that refer to aspects of the current environment?**

dispositional risk factors  
static risk factors  
historical risk factors  
environmental risk factors  
contextual risk factors

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 10-1-25

**Page-Reference:** 302

**Answer:** contextual risk factors

26 Gender is an example of a(n) \_\_\_\_\_ risk factor, whereas lack of social support is an example of a(n) \_\_\_\_\_ risk factor.

historical, static  
clinical, dispositional  
stable dynamic, acute dynamic  
dispositional, contextual  
historical, dispositional

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 10-1-26

**Page-Reference:** 302

**Answer:** dispositional, contextual

27 The two dispositional risk factors for criminal behaviour that have been researched extensively in the area of personality characteristics are:

psychosis and impulsiveness  
psychopathy and impulsiveness  
neuroticism and psychopathy  
psychopathy and impulsiveness  
psychosis and neuroticism

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 10-1-27

**Page-Reference:** 302,  
303

**Answer:** psychopathy and  
impulsiveness

28 **Monahan (2012) recommended that each of the following categories be examined as potential risk factors for terrorism *except* for:**

social wellbeing  
economic indicators  
governance  
law enforcement  
psychopathy

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 10-1-28

**Page-Reference:** 304

**Answer:**  
psychopathy

29 **Which of the following historical factors has *not* been identified as a strong predictor of future criminal behaviour for female offenders?**

late onset of criminal behaviour  
past nonviolent behaviour  
past supervision failure  
childhood history of maltreatment  
past violent behaviour

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 10-1-29

**Page-Reference:** 305-306

**Answer:** late onset of criminal behaviour

30 **Victims of \_\_\_\_\_ have an increased likelihood of becoming perpetrators of violent crime.**

neglect  
kidnapping  
sexual abuse  
stalking  
false imprisonment

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 10-1-30

**Page-Reference:** 305-306

**Answer:** neglect

31 **Which of the following statements is true regarding the connection between clinical risk factors and violence?**

Forensic psychiatric patients with a history of suicide attempts and self-injurious behaviour are less likely to engage in violence than other patients.

Most people with mental disorders are not violent.

Psychosis can decrease the odds of violence but this is dependent on study designs, what is measured, and timing of symptoms.

No relation has been found between substance use and violence.

Drug and alcohol use has not been associated with criminal behaviour.

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

10-1-31

**Page-**

**Reference:**

306-307

**Answer:** Most people with mental disorders are not violent.

32 **Research has demonstrated that higher rates of violence are associated with all of the following except for:**

schizophrenia  
affective disorders  
suicide attempts  
engaging in self-harm  
somatoform disorders

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

10-1-32

**Page-**

**Reference:**

307

**Answer:** somatoform disorders

33 **Lack of social support is considered a contextual factor increasing the risk for potential violence. The types of supports assessed for this risk factor do not include:**

financial support  
instrumental support  
emotional support  
appraisal support  
informational support

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 10-1-3  
3

**Page-  
Reference:** 307

**Answer:** financial  
support

34 **Consisting of ten items, the \_\_\_\_\_ is an actuarial scale developed for the prediction of sexual recidivism.**

STATIC-99  
VRAG  
SARA  
PCL-R  
VRS

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 10-1-34

**Page-  
Reference:** 308

**Answer:**  
STATIC-99

35 **The \_\_\_\_\_ is a risk assessment instrument that relies on structured professional judgment and is primarily successful at predicting violent recidivism in correctional and forensic psychiatric samples.**

VRAG  
HCR-20  
SARA  
STATIC-99  
PCL-R

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 10-1-35

**Page-Reference:** 309

**Answer:**  
HCR-20

36 **The HCR-20 is:**

- . an example of an actuarial tool for assessing risk of violence.
- . an example of an actuarial tool for assessing responsivity to treatment.
- . an example of a structured professional judgment for assessing risk of violence.
- . an example of a structured professional judgment for assessing psychopathy.
- . a tool for measuring happiness in criminals who are undergoing rehabilitation.

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 10-1-36

**Page-Reference:** 309

**Answer:** an example of a structured professional judgment for assessing risk of violence.

37 **The HCR-20 organizes risk factors into which of the following three scales?**

home, clinical, risk management  
historical, criminal, recidivistic  
home, clinical, recidivistic  
historical, clinical, risk management  
historical, criminal, risk management

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 10-1-3  
7

**Page-  
Reference:** 309

**Answer:** historical, clinical, risk  
management

38 **Past violence, age at first offence, and relationship instability fall under which scale in the HCR-20?**

clinical  
risk management  
historical  
criminal  
recidivistic

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 10-1-38

**Page-  
Reference:** 309

**Answer:**  
historical

39 **Lack of insight, negative attitudes, and active mental disorder symptoms fall under which scale in the HCR-20?**

risk management  
historical  
criminal  
clinical  
recidivistic

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

10-1-39

**Page-Reference:**

309

**Answer:**

clinical

40 Feasibility of plans, exposure to destabilizers, and stress fall under which scale in the HCR-20?

historical  
criminal  
risk management  
clinical  
recidivistic

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

10-1-40

**Page-Reference:**

309

**Answer:** risk management

41 The meta-analysis by yang, Wong, and Coid (2010) revealed that which of the following was most predictive of institutional violence?

STATIC-99  
VRAG  
SARA  
PCL-R  
HCR-20

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 10-1-4  
1

**Page-  
Reference:** 310

**Answer:**  
HCR-20

42 Which of the following is a factor influencing the recidivism process, according to Zamble and Quinsey's Coping-Relapse Model of Criminal Recidivism?

cognitive and emotional appraisal  
static influences  
dynamic influences  
risk management  
familial influence

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 10-1-42

**Page-  
Reference:** 310

**Answer:** cognitive and emotional  
appraisal

43 In the Coping-Relapse Model of Criminal Recidivism, under which category or level would traits such as psychopathy and emotional reactivity belong?

cognitive and emotional appraisal  
individual influences  
environmental trigger  
available response mechanisms  
criminal behaviour

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 10-1-43

**Page-Reference:** 310

**Answer:** individual influences

44 **Compared to male offenders, female offenders are more likely to:**

lack education  
be younger  
have extensive criminal histories  
experience childhood victimization  
be on social assistance

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 10-1-44

**Page-Reference:** 312

**Answer:** experience childhood victimization

45 **Approximately \_\_\_\_\_ of female offenders report experiencing childhood sexual abuse.**

10%  
40%  
50%  
70%  
95%

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 10-1-4  
5

**Page-Reference:** 312

**Answer:**  
50%

46 Which risk assessment instrument was found to be useful in predicting general recidivism comparably in both female and male offenders?

STATIC-99  
LSI-R  
VRAG  
MMPI  
HCR-20

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 10-1-4  
6

**Page-Reference:** 312

**Answer:** LSI-R

47 Aboriginal women make up approximately \_\_\_\_\_ of sentenced women across jurisdictions.

1%  
10%  
25%  
40%  
80%

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

10-1-47

**Page-Reference:**

313

**Answer:**

40%

48 \_\_\_\_\_ refer to factors that mitigate or reduce the likelihood of a negative outcome.

Risk factors  
Antisocial factors  
Predictive factors  
Criminal history factors  
Protective factors

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

10-1-48

**Page-Reference:**

315

**Answer:** Protective factors

49 Research by DeMatteo, Heilbrun, and Marczyk (2005) found that \_\_\_\_\_ is more of a protective factor for high-risk offenders, whereas \_\_\_\_\_ is more of a protective factor for low-risk offenders.

employment stability, strong family connections  
strong family connections, intelligence  
positive social orientations, employment stability  
intelligence, strong social supports  
strong social supports, positive social orientation

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 10-1-4  
9

**Page-  
Reference:** 315

**Answer:** employment stability, strong family connections

50 **The assessment test most commonly used by correctional psychologists is the:**

MMPI  
HCR-20  
VRAG  
PCL-R  
LSI-R

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 10-1-50

**Page-  
Reference:** 318

**Answer:**  
MMPI

51 **Review board decisions to transfer a forensic psychiatric patient to a less secure institution are typically based on all of the following factors except for:**

clinical judgment  
actuarial risk assessment scores  
institutional behaviour  
physical attractiveness  
compliance with medication

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:**  
10-1-5  
1

**Page-  
Reference:** 318

**Answer:** actuarial risk assessment  
scores

**52 In a study of desistance within a small group of high-risk violent offenders, Haggard, Gumpert, and Grann (2001) reported which of the following as a factor associated with desistance?**

social avoidance  
stable employment  
more than three prior convictions  
a good marriage  
older age

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:**  
10-1-5  
2

**Page-  
Reference:** 319

**Answer:** social  
avoidance

## Chapter 10 Short Answer Questions

1. **Name and define the two components of the risk assessment process.**

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 10-2-0  
1

**Page-Reference:** 290-29  
1

**Answer:** - *Prediction:* describes the probability that an individual will commit future acts of violence; focus is on the identification of risk factors related the commission of future violence.

- *Management:* development of interventions to manage or reduce the likelihood of future violence.

2. **Risk assessment is associated with both correct and incorrect prediction outcomes. Construct a 2 × 2 table illustrating four possible prediction outcomes in risk assessment for violence. Identify who suffers the consequences of each decision error.**

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 10-2-02

**Page-Reference:** 293-294

**Answer:**

Outcome	Outcome
---------	---------

Prediction	Does Not Reoffend (nonviolent)	Reoffends (violent)
------------	--------------------------------	---------------------

Predicted not to reoffend (nonviolent)	True negative (correct prediction)	False negative (incorrect prediction)
--	------------------------------------	---------------------------------------

Predict to reoffend (violent)		
-------------------------------	--	--

3. **What was the main issue raised in the Baxstrom and Dixon cases/studies? What are the two key findings to emerge from this research?**

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 10-2-03

**Page-Reference:** 295-296

**Answer:** - The Baxstrom and Dixon cases called into question the ability of mental health professionals to accurately predict violence.  
- Two key findings  
\* The base rate for violence is relatively low.  
\* The false positive rate in violence risk prediction is very high.

4. **Identify and explain the three main weaknesses of research on the prediction of violence.**

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 10-2-04

**Page-Reference:** 296-297

**Answer:** - *Limited number of risk factors being studied:* In reality, there are many different reasons why someone engages in violence, and thus many risk factors are likely involved.  
- *How the criterion variable (the variable you are trying to measure) is measured:* Often, official criminal records are used, which does not take into account unreported crimes.  
- *How the criterion variable is defined:* Limiting definition to either engaged in violence or not; other aspects of violence should be taken into consideration (e.g. severity of violence, types of violence, targets of violence, location, and motivation).

5. **What are the three types of judgment errors or biases that clinicians make when assessing risk?**

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:**

10-2-0  
5

**Page-**

**Reference:** 297-29  
8

**Answer:** 1) *Clinicians may rely on illusory correlations.* Clinicians include traits they intuitively believe to be important or assume to be associated with the risk but that actually are not (Odeh, Zeiss, & Huss, 2006). Chapman and Chapman (1967) defined an **illusory correlation** as the belief that a correlation exists between two events that in reality are either not correlated or are correlated to a much lesser degree. For example, a clinician might assume a strong correlation between a diagnosis of mental disorder and high risk for violent behaviour. Although some forms of mental disorder are related to an increased risk, a relationship has not been consistently found (Monahan & Steadman, 1994).

2) *Clinicians also tend to ignore base rates of violence.* (Monahan, 1981). Clinicians working in prisons or forensic psychiatric facilities may not be aware of how often individuals with specific characteristics act violently. For example, the base rate for recidivism in homicide offenders is extremely low. Other investigators (Borum, Otto, & Golding, 1993) have noted the tendency to rely on highly salient or unique cues, such as bizarre delusions.

3) *Clinicians tend to have an overconfidence bias.* Clinicians who are very confident in their risk assessments will be more likely to recommend and implement intervention strategies. However, people can be very confident in their risk assessments but be completely wrong. Desmarais, Nicholls, Read, and Brink (2010) investigated the association between clinicians' confidence and accuracy of predicting short-term in-patient violence. Clinicians completed a structured professional judgment measure designed to assess the likelihood of violent behaviour (i.e., verbal and physical aggression, self-harm) and indicated on a five-point scale their level of confidence. Most clinicians were highly confident; however, the association between confidence and accuracy was minimal.

**6. What is actuarial risk assessment? Provide two advantages and two disadvantages associated with this method. What new method of risk assessment was developed in an attempt to address certain limitations associated with the actuarial approach?**

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

10-2-06

**Page-**

**Reference:** 298-300

**Answer:** a. *Actuarial risk assessment:* decisions are based on risk factors that have been selected and combined on the basis of their empirical or statistical association with a specific outcome (i.e., violence)

- *Advantages:* good predictive validity, consistent.

- *Disadvantages:* provides little practical information about factors that need to be targeted for treatment, does not allow for incorporation of treatment gain into the prediction, risk factors not necessarily derived theoretically (i.e., certain risk factors don't seem to comply with common sense).

b. *New approach:*

- *Structured professional judgment:* The professional considers empirically derived risk factors but the final judgment of risk is based on the evaluator's professional judgment.

7. **Within the context of violence prediction, distinguish between a static risk factor, a dynamic risk factor, and a protective factor. Provide an example of each.**

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 10-2-0  
7

**Page-Reference:** 300-30  
1

**Answer:** - *Static risk factor*: measurable feature of an individual that is predictive of violence; does not fluctuate over time and cannot be changed through treatment. Examples: age at first arrest, history of childhood abuse, history of substance abuse, criminal record.

- *Dynamic risk factor*: measurable feature of an individual that is predictive of violence; fluctuates over time and is amenable to change. Examples: antisocial attitudes, coping style, impulsivity.

- *Protective factor*: factor that mitigates or reduces the likelihood of violence. Examples: prosocial environment, strong social supports, positive social orientation, intelligence.

8. **Identify and explain the three historical risk factors for violent/criminal behaviour discussed in your text. Be as specific as possible.**

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 10-2-08

**Page-Reference:** 305-306

**Answer:** - *Past behaviour*: Past violent behaviour and/or involvement in criminal activity is predictive of future violent behaviour.

- *Age of onset*: Individuals who exhibit antisocial behaviour at an earlier age are at higher risk for violence than those whose antisocial behaviour manifested itself at a later age.

- *Childhood history of maltreatment*: Individuals who have suffered physical abuse or neglect in childhood are at increased risk for violence.

9. **Using structured professional judgment, you wish to predict an offender's risk of violent recidivism (and not general recidivism). Of the assessment instruments described in your textbook, which one would you likely use? Provide a brief description of your chosen instrument.**

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 10-2-09

**Page-Reference:** 308-310

**Answer:** - HCR-20 (Webster et al., 1997)

- Relies on structured clinical judgment
- Designed to predict violent behaviour in correctional and forensic psychiatric samples
- HCR-20 contains 20 items organized into three main scales that represent Historical (past, static), Clinical (current, dynamic risk factors), and Risk Management (future community or institutional adjustment)

**10 Name at least three ways in which female offenders differ from male offenders.**

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 10-2-10

**Page-Reference:** 311-312

- Answer:** 1) Women engage in much less criminal behaviour than men  
2) Women are arrested for different crimes than men  
3) Women reoffend at a lower rate than do men  
4) Childhood victimization is more prevalent in female offenders than in male offenders  
5) Female offenders are more likely to have a serious mental disorder

**11 Describe the coping-relapse model of criminal recidivism proposed by Zamble and Quinsey (1997), including the four levels of the model that can lead to criminal behaviour.**

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 10-2-11

**Answer:** 1) Precipitating Situation: According to the model, the first event is some type of environmental trigger. What will be considered a trigger varies across individuals and can range from stressful life events, such as losing a job, having relationship problems, and financial difficulties, to more mundane daily events, such as being stuck in traffic.

2) Cognitive and Emotional Appraisal: Once the event has occurred, the individual will invoke both an emotional and cognitive appraisal of the event. If this appraisal process results in the experience of negative emotions (e.g., anger, hostility, fear) or elevated levels of stress, the individual will attempt to deal with these unpleasant feelings. If the individual does not possess adequate coping mechanisms, a worsening cycle of negative emotions and maladaptive cognitions occurs, eventually resulting in criminal behaviour. The model also posits that how an individual perceives and responds to an environmental trigger is dependent on two factors: individual and response mechanisms.

3) Individual Influences: Individual influences include factors such as criminal history and enduring personality traits (e.g., psychopathy, emotional reactivity). These factors influence how an individual will perceive an event and the likelihood that he or she will engage in criminal conduct, both of which are relatively stable. For example, research has found that psychopathic individuals are impulsive and more likely to interpret ambiguous events as hostile (Serin, 1991). These factors increase the likelihood of engaging in criminal behaviour.

4) Available Response Mechanism: Available response mechanisms also influence how an individual will perceive a situation, which, in turn, will mediate that person's response. These factors are considered to be more dynamic in nature and, thus, are important targets for intervention. Examples of these factors include coping ability, substance use, criminal attitudes and associates, and social supports. Imagine an individual who loses his job. He becomes angry and upset, and reverts to drinking to deal with these negative feelings. His drinking angers his intimate partner, who becomes less and less supportive of him. These factors increase the likelihood that he will resume his criminal behaviour.

\*\* NOTE: STUDENTS ALSO COULD REPLICATE FIGURE 10.1 (PAGE 310) AND EXPLAIN.

**12 What is desistance and why is age related to declines in criminal offending? What interpersonal moderators also have been proposed to aid in the transition between criminal offending and desistance?**

**Difficulty:** Moderate  
**QuestionID:** 10-2-12  
**Page-Reference:** 318-319

**Answer:** Desistance occurs when an individual who has engaged in criminal activities stops committing crime. Research even reveals that a majority of offenders show large declines in their criminal activity in early adulthood.

Age is strongly related to criminal behaviour, and the age-related decline in criminal offending is connected to the maturation process (Menard & Huizinga, 1989). LeBlanc (1993) defined maturation as the "development of self- and social control" (p. 65). Shover and Thompson (1992) suggested that as people age, they become less interested in a criminal lifestyle and are more able to understand and fear the consequences of engaging in crime.



**Chapter 11:  
Psychopaths**

**Chapter 11 Multiple Choice  
Questions**

1. **Psychopaths have been called:**

exceptional predators  
interpersonal predators  
intraspecies predators  
predatory species  
special predatory

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:**  
11-1-0  
1

**Page-  
Reference:** 321

**Answer:** intraspecies  
predators

2. **Robert's parents feel he exhibits reckless behaviour, irresponsibility, and lack of remorse. Robert has been this way since birth, and his parents feel he has a difficult temperament. Robert might have:**

psychopathy  
avoidant personality disorder  
affective disorder  
borderline personality disorder  
psychosis

**Difficulty:**  
Moderat

**QuestionID:** 11-1-02

**Page-Reference:** 321

**Answer:**  
psychopathy

3. **What term is used by the Inuit in Alaska to describe a psychopathic personality?**

Kunlangeta  
Windigo  
Aranakan  
Yorubas  
Trickster

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:**  
11-1-0  
3

**Page-Reference:** 322

**Answer:**  
Kunlangeta

4. **Hervey Cleckley's book \_\_\_\_\_ provided one of the most extensive clinical descriptions of psychopaths.**

*The Psychopath*  
*Evil People*  
*The Mask of Sanity*  
*Master Manipulator*  
*Callous*

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:**  
11-1-0  
4

**Page-Reference:** 322

**Answer:** *The Mask of Sanity*

**5. Which Canadian researcher developed the Psychopathy Checklist-Revised?**

- Olson
- Cleckley
- Patrick
- Hare
- Hart

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 11-1-0  
5

**Page-Reference:** 322

**Answer:**  
Hare

**6. Factor 2 is most strongly related to reoffending, substance abuse, lack of education, and \_\_\_\_\_.**

- emotional processing deficits
- predatory violence
- poor treatment response
- poor family background
- lying

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 11-1-06

**Page-Reference:** 322

**Answer:** poor family background

7. **The PCL-R has been supported by researchers for use with:**

- males
- females
- forensic psychiatric patients
- sexual offenders
- all of the above

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 11-1-0  
7

**Page-Reference:** 323

**Answer:** all of the above

8. **All of the following are challenges associated with using self-report questionnaires to assess psychopathy except:**

- Psychopaths will manipulate tests to reflect their best interests.
- Psychopaths are generally less intelligent thus can't respond accurately.
- Psychopaths will have difficulty reporting on specific emotions they may never have felt.
- Psychopaths may not have sufficient insight into their own traits and behaviour.
- All of the above are challenges with using self-reports to assess psychopathy.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 11-1-08

**Page-Reference:** 324

**Answer:** Psychopaths are generally less intelligent thus can't respond accurately.

9. **The most widely used self-report questionnaire(s) to assess psychopathy is/are:**

Psychopathic Personality Inventory-Revised.  
Self-Report Psychopathy Scale.  
Psychopathic Personality Inventory-Revised and the Psychopathy Checklist-Revised.  
Psychopathic Personality Inventory-Revised and the Self-Report Psychopathy Scale.  
Psychopathy Checklist-Revised.

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 11-1-0  
9

**Page-Reference:** 324-325

**Answer:** Psychopathic Personality Inventory-Revised and the Self-Report Psychopathy Scale.

- 10 **Based on the triarchic model of psychopathy developed by Patrick, Fowles, and Krueger (2009), self-report measures of psychopathy tap into which three main personality components?**

Fearless dominance, self-centred impulsivity, coldheartedness  
Erratic lifestyle, callous affect, interpersonal manipulation  
Boldness, meanness, disinhibition  
Impulsivity, criminal tendencies, empathy reduction  
Antisocial attitudes, deficient emotions, deceitful interpersonal style

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 11-1-1  
0

**Page-Reference:** 325

**Answer:** Boldness, meanness, disinhibition

- 11 **In an experiment measuring cheating behaviours and psychopathy, the best predictor of cheating was:**

low scores on the Self-Report Psychopathy Scale.  
low scores on the Psychopathy Checklist Revised.  
high scores on the Self-Report Psychopathy Scale.  
high scores on the Psychopathy Checklist-Revised.  
high scores on both the Self-Report Psychopathy Scale and the Psychopathy Checklist-Revised.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 11-1-1  
1

**Page-Reference:** 325

**Answer:** high scores on the Self-Report Psychopathy Scale.

- 12 **Studies using self-report psychopathy scales in university populations have reported that high psychopathy scores are associated with all of the following behaviours except:**

cheating on exams  
defrauding a lottery  
detecting vulnerable victims  
faking remorse  
child molestation

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 11-1-12

**Page-Reference:** 325

**Answer:** child molestation

- 13 **Psychopathy and Antisocial Personality Disorder (APD) share many of the same features. However, APD places more emphasis on \_\_\_\_\_.**

antisocial behaviours  
emotional deficits  
gender  
cognitive skills  
criminal history

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 11-1-13

**Page-Reference:** 326

**Answer:** antisocial behaviours

14 Approximately \_\_\_\_\_ of offenders can be classified as psychopaths.

1%–10%  
10%–25%  
30%–35%  
40%–50%  
90%

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 11-1-14

**Page-Reference:** 326

**Answer:** 10%–25%

15 The terms "psychopathy" and "sociopathy" are \_\_\_\_\_.

the same  
completely unrelated  
always used interchangeably  
related but distinct concepts  
used to describe the same concept

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 11-1-1  
5

**Page-Reference:** 326

**Answer:** related but distinct concepts

16 **Which statement accurately reflects the asymmetrical relationship between APD and psychopathy?**

Nearly all psychopathic offenders meet the diagnostic criteria for APD, but most diagnosed with APD are not psychopaths.

Nearly all offenders diagnosed with APD would also be diagnosed as psychopaths, but most psychopaths would not also be diagnosed as APD.

Offenders that are diagnosed with APD are ineligible for a diagnosis of psychopathy, but those diagnosed as psychopaths also may be diagnosed as APD.

Offenders that are diagnosed as psychopaths are ineligible for a diagnosis of APD, but those diagnosed as APD also may be diagnosed as psychopaths.

Psychopaths are never diagnosed as having APD, but offenders with APD are often misdiagnosed as psychopathic.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 11-1-1  
6

**Page-Reference:** 326

**Answer:** Nearly all psychopathic offenders meet the diagnostic criteria for APD, but most diagnosed with APD are not psychopaths.

17 **Which of the following is not an example of how the construct of psychopathy has influenced court decisions?**

support a transfer from youth to adult court  
contribute to dangerous offender designation  
determine parole eligibility  
assess mental state at time of offence  
prove incompetence or unfitness to stand trial

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 11-1-17

**Page-Reference:** 327

**Answer:** prove incompetence or unfitness to stand trial

- 18 **A diagnosis of psychopathy fulfills the disease of the mind requirement but it has never fulfilled the second requirement of\_\_\_\_\_.**

knowing the victim  
not appreciating the nature or quality of the act  
previously having been committed in a psychiatric institute  
having spent a night in a psychiatric facility  
having a diagnosed mood disorder

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 11-1-18

**Page-Reference:** 327

**Answer:** not appreciating the nature or quality of the act

- 19 **Dr. Shelby was hired by the prosecution and asked to provide a PCL-R rating for an offender on trial for sexual assault. The defence hired Dr. Krane to provide a PCL-R rating for their client as well. Based on the concept of adversarial allegiance, how would the ratings of the two psychologists differ?**

Dr. Shelby would provide a lower PCL-R rating than Dr. Krane.  
Dr. Krane would provide a higher PCL-R rating than Dr. Shelby.  
Dr. Shelby would provide a higher PCL-R rating than Dr. Krane.  
Dr. Shelby and Dr. Krane would both provide low ratings of psychopathy.  
Dr. Shelby and Dr. Krane's ratings would be similar as the disorder is assessed the same independent of who is doing the assessment.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 11-1-1  
9

**Page-Reference:** 327

**Answer:** Dr. Shelby would provide a higher PCL-R rating than Dr. Krane.

20 **The tendency for mental health experts to be biased toward those who hire them refers to \_\_\_\_\_.**

expert bias  
adversarial allegiance  
the hired gun approach  
the Mr. Big technique  
juror bias

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 11-1-2  
0

**Page-Reference:** 327

**Answer:** adversarial  
allegiance

21 **Psychopathic offending is \_\_\_\_\_.**

narrow and specific  
versatile  
high density  
low density and specific  
both versatile and high density

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 11-1-2  
1

**Page-Reference:** 328

**Answer:** both versatile and high density

22 **The relatively small number of psychopaths account for**

\_\_\_\_\_.

relatively small amount of crime  
relatively small amount of violent crime  
proportionate amount of crime  
disproportionately large amount of crime  
no crime

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 11-1-2  
2

**Page-Reference:** 328

**Answer:** disproportionately large amount of crime

23 **Psychopaths differ from other offenders in what way?**

They begin their criminal careers younger.  
They persist longer.  
Their use of violence lacks an emotional aspect.  
They commit a greater variety of violent offences.  
All of the above.

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 11-1-2  
3

**Page-Reference:** 328

**Answer:** All of the above.

24 Several studies have found that offenders who engage in \_\_\_\_\_ violence score significantly higher on measures of psychopathy than do offenders who engage in \_\_\_\_\_ violence.

reactive, premeditated  
impulsive, reactive  
instrumental, premeditated  
reactive, instrumental  
instrumental, reactive

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 11-1-24

**Page-Reference:** 328

**Answer:** instrumental, reactive

25 In a study by Woodworth and Porter (2002) examining the use of instrumental motives, psychopaths engaged in instrumental murder in \_\_\_\_\_ of cases:

93%  
77%  
50%  
34%  
10%

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 11-1-25

**Page-Reference:** 329

**Answer:**  
93%

- 26 **Recent research by Porter, ten Brinke, and Wilson (2009) found that psychopathic offenders can manipulate the criminal justice system in relation to parole and early release. Which statement best reflects their findings?**

Psychopaths are often denied early release because they tend to reoffend faster in the community.

Psychopaths and non-psychopaths have equal chances of getting early release, but psychopaths reoffend faster in the community.

Psychopaths are given early release from prison more often than non-psychopaths, and tend not to reoffend quickly once out of prison.

Non-psychopaths are more likely to be given early release relative to psychopaths, and do not reoffend in the community as fast as psychopaths.

Psychopaths are given early release from prison more often than non-psychopaths, but are less successful in the community because they reoffend faster.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 11-1-26

**Page-Reference:** 330

**Answer:** Psychopaths are given early release from prison more often than non-psychopaths, but are less successful in the community because they reoffend faster.

- 27 **According to Hare (1993) we are more likely to \_\_\_\_\_ than be murdered by a psychopath**

lose our life savings to a psychopath  
fall in love with a psychopath  
work with a psychopath  
be tricked by a psychopath  
become friends with a psychopath

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 11-1-27

**Page-Reference:** 330

**Answer:** lose our life savings to a psychopath

28 In a study by Coid et al. (2009) measuring psychopathy in a sample of community members \_\_\_\_\_ of these individuals scored zero on the PCL-SV.

10%  
19%  
44%  
71%  
100%

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 11-1-28

**Page-Reference:** 330

**Answer:** 71%

29 Which of the following is not a myth associated with psychopathy?

All psychopaths are violent.  
Psychopaths are all intelligent.  
Psychopaths are treatable.  
Psychopaths do not know the difference between right and wrong.  
There are no women psychopaths.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 11-1-29

**Page-Reference:** 313

**Answer:** Psychopaths are treatable.

30 **Recent studies suggest that psychopathic traits may be high for \_\_\_\_\_.**

doctors  
dentists  
professors  
corporate managers  
police officers

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 11-1-30

**Page-Reference:** 331

**Answer:** corporate managers

31 **A recent study on sex differences in psychopathic traits by Neumann, Schmitt, Carter, Embley, and Hare (2012) found:**

that lifestyle traits (i.e., risk-taking) are more prevalent than antisocial traits (i.e., violence) in general.

that females score higher on lifestyle traits and men score higher on antisocial traits.

that males score higher on lifestyle traits and females score higher on antisocial traits.

that antisocial traits (i.e., violence) are more prevalent than lifestyle traits (i.e., risk-taking) in general.

that men and women do not score differently across psychopathic trait categories and are both equally likely to be psychopathic.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 11-1-3  
1

**Page-Reference:** 331

**Answer:** that lifestyle traits (i.e., risk-taking) are more prevalent than antisocial traits (i.e., violence) in general.

32 **Kirkman (2005) reported that non-incarcerated psychopaths in heterosexual relationships tend to display all of the following characteristics except:**

multiple infidelities  
mistreatment of children  
emotional abuse  
dependence and insecurity  
isolation and coercion

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 11-1-32

**Page-Reference:** 331

**Answer:** dependence and insecurity

33 **In a sample of 60 rapists, Brown and Forth (1997) found:**

PCL-R scores are related with number of prior offences but not number of prior sexual offences.  
PCL-R scores are related with number of prior offences and the number of prior sexual offences.  
PCL-R scores are not related to prior offences but were predictive of the number of prior sexual offences.  
PCL-R scores are not related to prior offences or the number or prior sexual offences.  
all rapists had high PCL-R scores and more sexual offences than nonpsychopathic offenders.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 11-1-3  
3

**Page-Reference:** 333

**Answer:** PCL-R scores are related with number of prior offences but not number of prior sexual offences.

34 **Researchers agree that:**

experiencing traumatic events during childhood always leads to the development of psychopathic traits later in life.  
experiencing traumatic events during childhood never leads to the development of psychopathic traits.  
most psychopaths experience trauma during their childhood.  
psychopaths do not have the ability to experience traumatic events.  
many psychopaths do not experience trauma during their childhood.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 11-1-3  
4

**Page-Reference:** 333

**Answer:** many psychopaths do not experience trauma during their childhood.

35 **Psychopathic rapists are more likely to be**  
\_\_\_\_\_.

emotionally driven  
anxious  
opportunistic and vindictive  
disorganized  
feeling negative emotions prior to the rape

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 11-1-35

**Page-Reference:** 333

**Answer:** opportunistic and vindictive

36 **Gerald is classified as a sexual offender and is considered to be a part of the sex offender group that has been found to have the lowest psychopathy scores. What type of sex offender is Gerald?**

sexual homicide offender  
mixed sexual offender  
child molester  
rapist  
exhibitionist

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 11-1-36

**Page-Reference:** 333

**Answer:** child molester

37 **Evidence for overkill and enjoyment for hurting the victim (sadistic violence) is related to \_\_\_\_\_.**

offence history  
PCL-R scores  
family background  
level of education  
socio-economic status

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 11-1-37

**Page-Reference:** 333

**Answer:** PCL-R scores

38 In Rice, Harris, and Cormier's (1992) study to evaluate treatment outcomes in psychopaths, which group had the highest reoffending rate?

untreated nonpsychopaths  
treated nonpsychopaths  
untreated psychopaths  
treated psychopaths  
offenders who dropped out of the study

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 11-1-38

**Page-Reference:** 333-334

**Answer:** treated psychopaths

39 Oliver and Wong (2006) found that psychopathic offenders who remained in treatment were:

more likely to violently reoffend.  
more likely to manipulate prison staff.  
less likely to violently reoffend.  
likely not to show any treatment gains.  
more likely to be long-term offender.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 11-1-39

**Page-Reference:** 334

**Answer:** less likely to violently reoffend.

40 **The "faint hope clause" allows offenders convicted of murder to:**

be released from prison after serving 5 years of their sentence.  
apply for parole before their eligibility date.  
apply for appeals.  
make special dietary request in prison.  
leave prison to visit family once a year.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 11-1-40

**Page-Reference:** 334-335

**Answer:** apply for parole before their eligibility date.

41 **Based on legislative changes enacted in Bill C-48, which of the following offender groups is no longer eligible to apply for a hearing to request earlier parole eligibility under the faint hope clause provision?**

homicide offenders  
child molesters  
multiple murderers  
rapists  
dangerous offenders

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

11-1-41

**Page-**

**Reference:**

334-335

**Answer:** multiple  
murderers

**42 What is the three-dimensional factor structure of the Antisocial Process Screening Device?**

meanness, deceit, coldness  
callous-unemotional, impulsivity, narcissism  
narcissism, Machiavellianism, psychopathy  
impulsivity, antisocial acts, family relations  
cold-heartedness, self-centered impulsivity, fearless dominance

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

11-1-42

**Page-**

**Reference:**

335

**Answer:** callous-unemotional, impulsivity,  
narcissism

**43 Mock jurors presented with information on a juvenile psychopath are:**

likely to support the death penalty.  
not likely to support the death penalty.  
likely to support rehabilitation.  
not likely to support rehabilitation.  
unlikely to reach any verdict

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 11-1-4  
3

**Page-  
Reference:** 336-33  
7

**Answer:** likely to support the death  
penalty.

44 **Mock jurors are *least* likely to support the death penalty for which of the following adult offenders?**

psychopathic offenders  
psychotic offenders  
offenders with no mental illness  
schizophrenic offenders  
bipolar offenders

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 11-1-4  
4

**Page-  
Reference:** 336-33  
7

**Answer:** psychotic  
offenders

45 **Lynam, Caspi, Moffitt, Loeber, and Southamer-Loeber (2007) reported there was a \_\_\_\_\_ degree of stability in psychopathic traits from age 13 to age 24.**

low  
extremely high  
extremely low  
moderate  
high

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 11-1-4  
5

**Page-  
Reference:** 337

**Answer:**  
moderate

- 46 In Caldwell et al. (2006), which examined treatment outcomes in youth with high scores on the Psychopathy Checklist: Youth Version, the youth who received treatment in a correctional centre had:

lower reoffending rates than youth treated in a treatment centre.  
lower violent reoffending rates than youth treated in a treatment centre.  
twice the reoffending rates of youth treated in a treatment centre.  
twice the violent reoffending rates of youth treated in a treatment centre.  
the rates of reoffending were the same for both groups of youth.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 11-1-46

**Page-  
Reference:** 338

**Answer:** twice the violent reoffending rates of youth treated in a treatment centre.

- 47 The best research design to determine the extent to which family experiences influence the development of psychopathic traits is:

prospective longitudinal studies  
retrospective studies  
cross-sectional studies  
experimental  
short-term field studies

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

11-1-47

**Page-Reference:**

339

**Answer:** prospective longitudinal studies

- 48 **Retrospective studies assessing callous/unemotional traits in youth or psychopathy in adults by asking them about their childhood experiences have found that psychopathic individuals report lower levels of \_\_\_\_\_.**

child abuse  
parental care  
family conflict  
prosocial relations  
number of siblings

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

11-1-48

**Page-Reference:**

339

**Answer:** parental care

- 49 **In the Cambridge Study in Delinquent Development, \_\_\_\_\_ of offenders scoring 10 or more on the PCL:SV had been convicted of an offence.**

5%  
27%  
57%  
77%  
97%

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

11-1-49

**Page-Reference:**

339

**Answer:**

97%

50 **Quayle (2008) provided several recommendations for interviewing and interrogating a psychopathic suspect, including all of the following except \_\_\_\_\_.**

show liking or admiration  
use a lot of bluffs  
avoid criticism  
avoid conveying emotions  
convey experience and confidence

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

11-1-50

**Page-Reference:**

341

**Answer:** use a lot of bluffs

51 **Oliver has been arrested as the prime suspect in a murder case and is about to undergo an interrogation. Oliver is believed to be highly psychopathic. Based on the suggestions of Quayle (2008), what type of behaviour would not be expected of a psychopathic suspect?**

attempting to control the interview  
attempting to shock  
not being fooled by bluffs  
dislikes being the focus of attention  
tries to outwit the interrogator

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 11-1-51

**Page-Reference:** 340

**Answer:** dislikes being the focus of attention

52 In the lexical-decision task by Williamson, Harpur, and Hare (1991), nonpsychopaths:

identified non words faster than psychopaths.  
identified neutral words faster than psychopaths.  
identified emotional words faster than psychopaths.  
identified emotional words faster than neutral words.  
there was no difference between nonpsychopaths and psychopaths in word identification

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 11-1-52

**Page-Reference:** 342

**Answer:** identified emotional words faster than psychopaths.

53 The two theories of psychopathy are \_\_\_\_\_ and \_\_\_\_\_.

response modulation deficit, affective theory  
startle-blink response, affective theory  
response modulation deficit, startle-blink response  
antisocial process screening, startle-blink response  
affective theory, antisocial process screening

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 11-1-5  
3

**Page-  
Reference:** 341

**Answer:** response modulation deficit, affective theory

54 Which of the following is *not* a function of the amygdala?

memory  
decision making  
language  
defence reactions  
emotional expression

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 11-1-54

**Page-  
Reference:** 342-343

**Answer:** language

55 Recent research has suggested that psychopaths' performance deficits on emotional tasks may not result from amygdala dysfunction, but rather deficits in \_\_\_\_\_.

memory  
decision making  
language  
attention  
perception

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 11-1-55

**Page-Reference:** 343

**Answer:**  
attention

## Chapter 11 Short Answer Questions

1. **Name and describe the most widely used assessment tool for measuring psychopathic traits in adults.**

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 11-2-01

**Page-Reference:** 322

**Answer:** - Hare's Psychopathy Checklist-Revised

- 20-item scale using a semi-structured interview and a review of file information.

- Measures interpersonal, affective, and behavioural aspects of psychopathy.

- Items are rated on a 3-point scale where a score of 2 indicates the item applies to the individual, 1 indicates that the item applies somewhat, and 0 indicates that the item does not apply.

- Scores range from 0 to 40 and can be subdivided into 3 groups: high PCL-R scores (30 and above) are defined as psychopaths, a middle scoring group with scores ranging from 20 to 30, and a nonpsychopathic group with scores below 20.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 11-2-02

**Page-Reference:** 321, 326

**Answer:** - Psychopathy: A personality disorder defined by a collection of interpersonal, affective, and behavioural characteristics, including manipulation, lack of remorse or empathy, impulsivity, and antisocial behaviours.

- Antisocial Personality Disorder: A personality disorder characterized by a history of behaviours in which the rights of others are violated.
- Sociopathy: A label used to describe a person whose psychopathic traits are assumed to be due to environmental factors.
- Differences:
  - \* Sociopaths display similar traits to psychopaths, however, these appear to be a result of poor socialization.
  - \* Psychopaths on the other hand seem to have a genetic predisposition to a certain temperament which makes them difficult to socialize.
  - \* Antisocial Personality Disorder places more emphasis on antisocial behaviours than does psychopathy. There are more people with Antisocial Personality Disorder than there are psychopaths.

**3. Explain how psychopaths differ from nonpsychopaths and more specifically how psychopaths' use of violence differs from nonpsychopathic offenders.**

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 11-2-03

**Page-Reference:** 328-330

**Answer:** - Psychopaths are high-density, versatile offenders.

- Psychopaths start their criminal careers younger and persist longer, engage in more violent offenses, commit a greater variety of offenses, engage in more violence in institutions and in the community, and are more likely to reoffend upon release.
- Psychopathic violence is more likely to be predatory in nature, motivated by identifiable goals, and lack the emotional context that is usually present with other offenders.
- Psychopaths carry out instrumental violence that is opportunistic and vengeful.
- Their acts of violence tend to be premeditated, as opposed to reactive violence which tends to be impulsive and unplanned.
- Psychopaths are more likely to target strangers, whereas, nonpsychopathic offenders usually target someone they know in response to provocation.

**4. Identify the ten myths associated with**

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:**  
11-2-0  
4

**Page-  
Reference:** 329

**Answer:** 1) Psychopaths are born, not made  
2) Once a psychopath, always a psychopath  
3) All psychopaths are violent  
4) You either are or are not a psychopath  
5) There are no women psychopaths  
6) Psychopathy and APD are different labels for the same construct  
7) Psychopaths are all intelligent  
8) Psychopaths are untreatable  
9) Psychopathic traits cannot be measured via self-report instruments  
10) Psychopaths do not know the difference between right and wrong

5. **Explain why most researchers believe psychopaths cannot be treated. Describe one well-known study that lends support for this notion.**

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:**  
11-2-0  
5

**Page-  
Reference:** 333-33  
4

**Answer:** - Psychopaths see nothing wrong with their behaviour, often don't feel anxiety or distress, and usually only participate in treatment when it is to their benefit.  
- Rice, Harris, and Cormier (1992) conducted a study on violent psychopathic and nonpsychopathic forensic psychiatric patients to evaluate the effects of an intensive therapeutic treatment program.  
- Patients were followed for 10 years after release.  
- Untreated nonpsychopaths had a violent reoffending rate of 39%  
- Treated nonpsychopaths had a violent reoffending rate of 22%  
- Untreated psychopaths had a violent reoffending rate of 55%  
- Treated psychopaths had a violent reoffending rate of 77%  
- These findings contributed to many clinicians concluding that psychopaths should not be treated as their recidivism rates are higher when this is attempted.

**Difficulty:** Moderate  
**QuestionID:** 11-2-06  
**Page-Reference:** 334-335

**Answer:** - Clifford Olson is serving a life sentence for murdering 11 children in 1980 and 1981 and is known as one of Canada's most prolific serial killers. Olson is also known for a "cash for corpses" deal he made with the Royal Canadian Mounted Police. He negotiated \$10,000 for each body he uncovered for a total of \$100,000.  
- Olson requested an earlier parole eligibility date (known as the "faint hope clause") and was denied.  
- As a result of Olson's use of the faint hope clause, changes were made to Section 745 of the Canadian Criminal Code. Multiple murderers are now unable to use Section 745.  
- Dr. Stanley Semrau assessed Olson with the PCL-R and explains that Olson received the highest score he has ever given to an offender.  
- As a result of recent bragging on Olson's part, the Canadian government is looking to change laws that allows offenders to receive pension cheques while incarcerated.

**7. Discuss several of the reservations that have been raised concerning applying the label of psychopath to children and adults, and what research has found regarding these concerns.**

**Difficulty:** Hard  
**QuestionID:** 11-2-07  
**Page-Reference:** 336-337

**Answer:** One concern has been the use of the label *psychopath*, a label that has many negative connotations for the public and for mental health and criminal justice professionals. As stated by Murrie et al. (2004), "The use of the label 'psychopath' has ominous connotations that may adversely influence treatment decisions, social service plans, and juvenile justice determinations" (p. 64). In fact, studies by Edens et al. (2003) have demonstrated that mock jurors are more likely to support the death penalty for psychopathic relative to non-psychopathic defendants.

Another concern is whether psychopathic traits in youth are stable. Recent studies have indicated a moderate degree of stability in traits between 13-24 years old (Lynam et al., 2007).

Another concern is whether scores on measures of psychopathy arguably may be inflated by general characteristics of adolescence (Edens et al. 2001, p. 59). Arguing against this last point are the few studies measuring psychopathic traits in community youth that have found the scores on psychopathy measures to be very low (Forth et al., 2003; Sevecke, Pukrop, Kosson, & Krischer, 2009).

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 11-2-08

**Page-Reference:** 338-339

**Answer:** - Identical twins who have been raised apart allow us to determine the effects of environment on psychopathic traits.

- Fraternal twins who have been raised together can be compared to identical twins raised together.
- Biological siblings raised together can be compared to adoptive siblings raised together.

**9. List the five recommendations identified by Quayle (2008) to use when interviewing a psychopathic suspect.**

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 11-2-09

**Page-Reference:** 341

**Answer:** Ensure case familiarity (interrogators should be extremely familiar with the evidence to counteract the psychopath's evasiveness and deceitfulness)

Convey experience and confidence (interrogators need to be able to control the interview and create an atmosphere of authority)

Show liking or admiration (psychopaths respond to thinking that interrogators want to learn from them; this apparent desire to learn encourages psychopaths to keep talking)

Avoid criticism (psychopaths may become hostile and stop the interview)

Avoid conveying emotions (interrogators should avoid conveying their own emotions about the offence or lack of progress in the case)

**10 Describe the cognitive and affective models of psychopathy in terms of the two predominant theories about the development of psychopathy.**

**QuestionID:**

11-2-1  
0

**Page-**

**Reference:** 341-34  
3

**Answer:** Newman, Brinkley, Lorenz, Hiatt, and MacCoon (2007) have proposed that psychopaths have a **response modulation deficit**. According to this theory, psychopaths fail to use contextual cues that are peripheral to a dominant response set to modulate their behaviour. In other words, if psychopaths are engaging in specific rewarded behaviour, they will not pay attention to other information that might inhibit their behaviour. This theory has been used to explain why psychopaths fail to learn to avoid punishment (i.e., have poor passive avoidance).

The other theory proposes that psychopaths have a deficit in the experience of certain critical emotions that guide prosocial behaviour and inhibit deviance (Blair, 2006; Hare, 2007; Patrick, 2007). Hervey Cleckley (1976) was the first person to theorize that psychopaths have a deep-rooted emotional deficit that involves the disconnection between cognitive-linguistic processing and emotional experience. Researchers have used measured affective processing in a range of different paradigms. For example, Blair, Budhani, Colledge, and Scott (2005) asked children to identify the emotions in neutral words spoken with intonations conveying happiness, disgust, anger, sadness, and fear. Boys with many psychopathic traits were impaired at recognizing fearful vocal affect. In adults, Patrick, Bradley, and Lang (1993) compared startle reflexes of psychopathic and nonpsychopathic sexual offenders to slides of positive (e.g., puppies, babies, eroticism), neutral (e.g., table, glass), and negative (e.g., baby with tumour, injured kitten, homicide scene) stimuli. The startle-elicited blinks of nonpsychopathic offenders were smaller when watching positive slides, moderate when watching neutral slides, and enhanced when watching negative slides. In contrast, the psychopathic offenders' startle-elicited blink did not differ in magnitude across the different types of slides.

These findings of emotional deficits in psychopaths have led some researchers to propose an amygdala dysfunction theory (Blair, 2006, 2008). The amygdala is part of the limbic centre, which regulates the expression of emotion and emotional memory. It is linked to many other brain regions responsible for memory, control of the autonomic nervous system, aggression, decision making, approach and avoidance behaviour, and defence reactions.

## Chapter 12: Assessment and Treatment of Young Offenders

### Chapter 12 Multiple Choice Questions

1. What age range did the Juvenile Delinquents Act (JDA) cover?

- 2 to 12 years
- 2 to 18 years
- 4 to 14 years
- 6 to 12 years
- 7 to 16 years (18 years in some jurisdictions)

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

12-1-01

**Page-Reference:**

346

**Answer:** 7 to 16 years (18 years in some jurisdictions)

2. Current law in Canada dictates that anyone younger than age 12 who engages in a criminal act is processed through \_\_\_\_\_.

- the civil court system
- youth courts
- family and social service agencies
- hospitals
- sentencing circles

**Difficulty:**

Easy

**QuestionID:** 12-1-02

**Page-Reference:** 346

**Answer:** family and social service agencies

3. **A separate youth court system was first established with the introduction of:**

- the Juvenile Delinquents Act (JDA)
- the Youth Criminal Justice Act (YCJA)
- the Youth Diversion Act (YDA)
- the Young Offenders Act (YOA)
- the Youth Criminal Courts Act (YCCA)

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 12-1-03

**Page-Reference:** 346

**Answer:** the Juvenile Delinquents Act (JDA)

4. **What disposition was available for delinquents under the Juvenile Delinquents Act (JDA)?**

- sentenced to an industrial school
- adjournment without penalty
- probation
- foster care
- all of the above

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 12-1-04

**Page-Reference:** 346

**Answer:** all of the above

5. **According to the Juvenile Delinquents Act (JDA), what was the minimum age set for which a child could be charged with a criminal offence?**

- 7
- 9
- 11
- 12
- 14

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 12-1-05

**Page-Reference:** 346

**Answer:** 7

6. **Which of the following statements is not a criticism of the Young Offenders Act?**

- Youths were sometimes denied rights such as right to counsel and right to appeal.
- Violent offences carried relatively "light" sentences.
- Disagreements existed concerning raising the minimum age from 7 to 12 years.
- Discrepancies existed with factors leading to youth transfer to adult court.
- All of the above are criticisms of the Young Offenders Act.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 12-1-06

**Page-Reference:** 347-348

**Answer:** Youths were sometimes denied rights such as right to counsel and right to appeal.

**7. What is *not* an objective of the Youth Criminal Justice Act?**

- to prevent youth crime
  - to provide meaningful consequences and encourage responsibility of behaviour
  - to improve rehabilitation and reintegration of youth into the community
  - to keep young offenders out of court and in the community
- all of the above are objectives of the Youth Criminal Justice Act

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 12-1-07

**Page-Reference:** 348

**Answer:** all of the above are objectives of the Youth Criminal Justice Act

**8. The Youth Criminal Justice Act introduced a new form of custodial sentence called:**

- Intensive Rehabilitative Custody and Supervision Order
- Youth Forensic Community Treatment Programs
- Extrajudicial Sentence Program
- Reintegrative Secure and Community Custody Order
- Graduated Sentencing Program

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 12-1-08

**Page-Reference:** 348

**Answer:** Intensive Rehabilitative Custody and Supervision Order

9. **Under the Youth Criminal Justice Act, under what condition can the name of the youth be reported to the public?**

If the defendant is between the ages of 14 and 17 and is convicted of serious, violent offences.  
If the youth is considered dangerous.  
If the youth has not yet been apprehended.  
All of the above are conditions where the name of the youth can be reported to public.  
Under no circumstances can a youth's name be reported in the media.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 12-1-0  
9

**Page-Reference:** 348

**Answer:** All of the above are conditions where the name of the youth can be reported to public.

10 **What is *not* a sentencing option under the Youth Criminal Justice Act?**

reprimand  
intensive support and supervision order  
attendance order  
deferred custody and supervision order  
all of the above are sentencing options.

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 12-1-1  
0

**Page-Reference:** 349

**Answer:** all of the above are sentencing options.

11 Under the Criminal Justice Act, what is the minimum age a judge can impose an adult sentence?

- 10
- 12
- 14
- 16
- 18

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:** 12-1-11

**Page-Reference:** 350

**Answer:**

14

12 Generally, the total number of crimes committed by youth has been:

- increasing
- decreasing
- no change
- decreasing for those under 10
- increasing for those over 10

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 12-1-12

**Page-Reference:** 352

**Answer:**

decreasing

13 What is the most frequent sentence imposed in youth court?

fine  
incarceration  
probation  
reprimand  
absolute discharge

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 12-1-1  
3

**Page-  
Reference:** 352

**Answer:**  
probation

- 14 Which category of Criminal Code offence showed the greatest percentage decrease in the number of cases completed in youth court between 2012/2013 and 2013/2014?

violent offences  
property offences  
administration of justice offences  
traffic offences  
federal statute offences

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 12-1-1  
4

**Page-  
Reference:** 352-35  
3

**Answer:** traffic  
offences

- 15 Which category of Criminal Code offence showed the smallest percentage decrease in the number of cases completed in youth court between 2012/2013 and 2013/2014?

violent offences  
property offences  
administration of justice offences  
traffic offences  
federal statute offences

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 12-1-1  
5

**Page-  
Reference:** 352-35  
3

**Answer:** violent  
offences

16 **What is the maximum sentence that can be given to youth under the Youth Criminal Justice Act (YCJA)?**

2 years  
3 years  
5 years  
10 years  
15 years

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 12-1-16

**Page-  
Reference:** 354

**Answer:** 2  
years

17 **Prior to commencing a court-ordered assessment of a child or adolescent, a clinician must legally:**

obtain consent from the youth's parents or guardians.  
obtain consent from the youth.  
obtain assent from the youth.  
obtain consent from the youth's lawyer.  
court-ordered assessments do not legally require consent or assent.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 12-1-17

**Page-Reference:** 355

**Answer:** court-ordered assessments do not legally require consent or assent.

18 Which is an example of an internalizing disorder?

depression  
delinquency  
fighting  
bullying  
lying

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 12-1-18

**Page-Reference:** 355

**Answer:** depression

19 Which is *not* an example of an externalizing disorder?

bullying  
lying  
fighting  
destructive behaviour  
anxiety

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 12-1-1  
9

**Page-  
Reference:** 355

**Answer:**  
anxiety

20 **Which of the following statements is *false* regarding externalizing problems in youth?**

They are more difficult to treat than internalizing problems.  
They are more likely to be experienced by males.  
They are not very stable.  
They focus on behavioural difficulties.  
Internalizing problems might co-occur with externalizing difficulties.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 12-1-2  
0

**Page-  
Reference:** 355

**Answer:** They are not very stable.

21 **Which type of problems in youth are considered to be more difficult to treat?**

emotional problems  
internalizing problems  
attention problems  
externalizing problems  
cognitive problems

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 12-1-21

**Page-Reference:** 355

**Answer:** externalizing problems

22 Which of the following is a disorder characterized by a persistent pattern of behaviour in which a youth violates the rights of others or age-appropriate societal norms or rules?

conduct disorder  
attention deficit/hyperactivity disorder  
oppositional defiant disorder  
misconduct disorder  
hyper-aggressive disorder

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 12-1-22

**Page-Reference:** 355

**Answer:** conduct disorder

23 What is *not* true regarding assessing externalizing problems in children?

parents, teachers and peers may be interviewed.  
behaviour should be considered within a developmental context.  
the duration, severity, and frequency of troublesome behaviours should be measured.  
the child/youth may not be aware of his/her behaviour.  
all of the above are true.

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 12-1-2  
3

**Page-Reference:** 355

**Answer:** all of the above are true.

24 **Approximately what percentage of children with oppositional defiant disorder (ODD) go on to develop conduct disorder (CD)?**

- 10%
- 20%
- 30%
- 40%
- 50%

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 12-1-24

**Page-Reference:** 356

**Answer:** 40%

25 **Approximately \_\_\_\_\_ of youth diagnosed with oppositional defiant disorder (ODD) develop conduct disorder (CD).**

10%  
25%  
40%  
50%  
75%

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

12-1-25

**Page-Reference:**

356

**Answer:**

40%

26 Which diagnosis is often a precursor to antisocial personality disorder?

attention-deficit hyperactivity disorder  
oppositional defiant disorder  
conduct disorder  
depression  
anxiety

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

12-1-26

**Page-Reference:**

356

**Answer:** conduct disorder

27 Approximately \_\_\_\_\_ of children meeting criteria for CD go on to receive diagnoses of antisocial personality disorder in adulthood.

30%-50%  
0%-20%  
60%-80%  
80%-100%  
70%-90%

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 12-1-27

**Page-Reference:** 356

**Answer:**  
30%-50%

- 28 **Spencer is a 13-year-old boy who is frequently irritable, argumentative, and acts in a vindictive and revengeful fashion any time anyone "wrongs" him. He often is angry and refuses to obey his parents and teachers. If you were a clinician assessing Spencer's behaviour, which is the most likely diagnosis you would give him?**

attention deficit hyperactivity disorder  
oppositional defiant disorder  
conduct disorder  
antisocial personality disorder  
psychopathy

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:**  
12-1-28

**Page-Reference:** 355-356

**Answer:** oppositional defiant disorder

- 29 **Monty is a 15-year-old youth who constantly breaks the rules, has been fined many times by the police for repeated property and assaultive offences, engages in bullying, and believes that "rules were made to be broken". He is well-known to local law enforcement as a "future long-term offender" and was recently mandated to a community treatment program following an attack on a female student involving sexual exploitation. If you were a clinician assessing Monty's behaviour**

attention deficit hyperactivity disorder  
oppositional defiant disorder  
conduct disorder  
antisocial personality disorder  
psychopathy

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 12-1-2  
9

**Page-  
Reference:** 355-35  
6

**Answer:** conduct  
disorder

30 Which of the following statements is true regarding identifying risk factors for young offenders?

History of behaviour is limited and ambiguous for young offenders.  
Adolescent behaviour may be more influenced by context than enduring characteristics.  
Adolescents experience more developmental and character changes than adults.  
It is a challenge to separate developmental issues from persistent personality and character.  
All of the above are true.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 12-1-30

**Page-  
Reference:** 357

**Answer:** All of the above are true.

31 Worldwide prevalence rates for mental disorders in children and youth suggest a prevalence rate of approximately \_\_\_\_\_ for any disruptive disorder?

1%  
6%  
22%  
65%  
72%

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 12-1-31

**Page-Reference:** 357

**Answer:**  
6%

32 Which of the following risk assessment measures is not used with young offenders in Canada?

HCR-20  
ORAMS  
SAVRY  
VRAG  
ACDI

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 12-1-32

**Page-Reference:** 358

**Answer:**  
VRAG

33 Which of the following risk assessment measures is used primarily to assess substance use and abuse in young offenders?

HCR-20  
YLS-CMI  
SAVRY  
YO-LSI  
ACDI

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:**  
12-1-3  
3

**Page-  
Reference:** 358

**Answer:**  
ACDI

- 34 **Craig is a youth in secure custody, and is assessed for his level of risk through use of an Inmate Security Assessment and a Primary Risk Assessment. Which of the following risk assessment tools is being utilized in Craig's case?**

HCR-20  
YLS-CMI  
SAVRY  
ORAMS  
ACDI

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:**  
12-1-3  
4

**Page-  
Reference:** 358

**Answer:**  
ORAMS

- 35 **Which of the following statements is *true* regarding the developmental trajectory of youthful offenders?**

Early onset of antisocial behaviour is usually more treatable and less persistent than a later onset of antisocial behaviour.  
Most young offenders begin committing antisocial acts in adolescence rather than childhood.  
Most children with behavioural problems go on to become adult offenders.  
Generally, levels of aggression exhibited in childhood and adolescence remain fairly stable with age.  
The childhood-onset trajectory is a more frequent occurrence than adolescent onset.

**Difficulty:** Moderate  
**QuestionID:** 12-1-35  
**Page-Reference:** 359

**Answer:** Most young offenders begin committing antisocial acts in adolescence rather than childhood.

36 Which type of trajectory is most strongly associated with serious persistent antisocial behaviour in adulthood?

psychopathic pathway  
childhood-onset  
externalizing pathway  
adolescent-onset  
internalizing pathway

**Difficulty:** Hard  
**QuestionID:** 12-1-36  
**Page-Reference:** 359

**Answer:** childhood-onset

37 Youth regularly engaging in antisocial acts are more likely than non-antisocial youth to:

have a greater degree of frontal lobe inhibition.  
have a biological mother that engaged in antisocial behaviour.  
misattribute hostile intent to negative situations.  
demonstrate cognitive deficits.  
all of the above.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 12-1-3  
7

**Page-Reference:** 359-36  
0

**Answer:** demonstrate cognitive deficits.

- 38 **Marcus attacked his grade 8 classmate during the lunch hour so that he could steal his test notes for the upcoming quiz. According to Dodge and colleagues, what type of aggression is Marcus displaying?**

proactive aggression  
reactive aggression  
social aggression  
cognitive aggression  
situational aggression

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 12-1-3  
8

**Page-Reference:** 360-36  
1

**Answer:** proactive aggression

- 39 **Observations of aggression and violence among a youth's parents, peers, and siblings has been found to lead to greater aggressive tendencies in the youth, especially if the observed aggression was rewarded. This pattern of findings is consistent with what theory of youth antisocial behaviour?**

biological theory  
genetic theory  
social learning theory  
cognitive theory  
attention theory

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

12-1-39

**Page-**

**Reference:**

361-362

**Answer:** social learning theory

40 **Juanita shoved Amber down the stairs at school after she caught Amber trying to kiss her boyfriend. According to Dodge and colleagues, what type of aggression is Juanita displaying?**

proactive aggression  
reactive aggression  
social aggression  
cognitive aggression  
situational aggression

**Difficulty:**

Hard

**QuestionID:**

12-1-40

**Page-**

**Reference:**

360-361

**Answer:** reactive aggression

41 **What is *not* considered an individual risk factor for behavioural problems in youth?**

impulsivity  
parent's history of ADHD  
mother's use of drugs or alcohol during pregnancy  
resilience  
difficult temperament

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 12-1-41

**Page-Reference:** 362-363

**Answer:**  
resilience

42 Which of the following familial risk factors is associated with behavioural problems in youth?

impulsivity  
difficult temperament  
playing with aggressive peers  
child neglect  
mother's use of drugs or alcohol during pregnancy

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 12-1-42

**Page-Reference:** 363

**Answer:** child neglect

43 Erickson and Butters (2006) examined the relationship between gangs, guns, and drugs in Toronto and Montreal. What did they find?

As gang presence in schools increased so did the number of guns and the amount of drugs.  
Gang presence in schools did not influence the number of guns or the amount of drugs.  
As gang presence in schools increased, the number of guns and the amount of drugs decreased.  
Gang presence in schools increases the number of guns but decreases the amount of drugs.  
Gang presence in schools decreases the number of guns but increases the amount of drugs.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 12-1-43

**Page-Reference:** 365

**Answer:** As gang presence in schools increased so did the number of guns and the amount of drugs.

44 Which of the following is considered one of the greatest school and social factors in risk for reoffending amongst youth?

having trouble reading  
children with early CD symptoms  
social rejection  
being a member of a gang  
low intelligence

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 12-1-44

**Page-Reference:** 365

**Answer:** being a member of a gang

45 \_\_\_\_\_ is a general term used to describe the ability to overcome stress and adversity.

Prosocial tendency  
Resilience  
Social competence  
Self-efficacy  
Self-esteem

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 12-1-4  
5

**Page-  
Reference:** 365

**Answer:**  
Resilience

**46 In what way(s) are protective factors effective?**

They reduce negative outcomes by changing the risk level of the child's exposure to a risk factor.  
They change the negative chain reaction following exposure to risk.  
They help to develop and maintain self-esteem and self-efficacy.  
They provide opportunities to children that they would not otherwise have.  
All of the above.

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 12-1-4  
6

**Page-  
Reference:** 365-36  
6

**Answer:** All of the  
above.

**47 Tyson is a youth who has a good relationship with his parents and seems to have little interest in becoming involved in criminal activities, although he lives in a poor neighbourhood and often witnesses violence at school. What category of protective factors would his good parent-child relationship be classified as?**

individual protective factors  
biological protective factors  
familial protective factors  
social/external protective factors  
relational protective factors

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 12-1-47

**Page-Reference:** 366

**Answer:** familial protective factors

48 **Strategies that attempt to reduce the frequency of violence are known as:**

primary intervention strategies  
class-one intervention strategies  
secondary intervention strategies  
class-two intervention strategies  
tertiary intervention strategies

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 12-1-48

**Page-Reference:** 367

**Answer:** secondary intervention strategies

49 **Project Head Start and the Incredible Years Parenting Program are both examples of what type of intervention strategy?**

family-oriented strategy  
secondary intervention strategy  
primary intervention strategy  
community-wide strategy  
tertiary intervention strategy

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:** 12-1-49

**Page-Reference:** 367-369

**Answer:** primary intervention strategy

50 **The SNAP Under 12 Outreach Project (ORP) is an example of what type of strategy?**

family-oriented strategy  
secondary intervention strategy  
school-oriented strategy  
community-wide strategy  
tertiary intervention strategy

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:** 12-1-50

**Page-Reference:** 369

**Answer:** community-wide strategy

51 **A study in Ontario found that multisystemic therapy (MST) was not more effective at reducing recidivism than providing usual services for high-risk youth. According to the text, which of the following statements was suggested as a potential explanation for this unexpected finding?**

The study did not include a follow-up period.  
The usual services group was at much lower risk to reoffend at the beginning of the study.  
MST may have benefited youths on factors that were not included in the study.  
The researchers failed to include a control group, so no explanation is possible.  
The researchers did not have the full support of the parents.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 12-1-5  
1

**Page-Reference:** 372

**Answer:** MST may have benefited youths on factors that were not included in the study.

52 **The following therapy considers the influence of the family, peers, school, neighbourhood, and community environment:**

parent training  
cognitive training  
dual systems approach  
social-skills training  
multisystemic therapy

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 12-1-5  
2

**Page-Reference:** 372-37  
3

**Answer:** multisystemic therapy

53 **Which of the following statements is true regarding multisystemic therapy (MST) with young offenders?**

The youth's case manager is accessible 24 hours a day, 7 days a week.  
Treatment outcome studies show that MST is more effective than the usual services available in Ontario.

MST proposes that delinquency is multi-determined and that treatment should occur in institutions.

MST focuses solely on the youth's relationship with his/her primary caregiver.  
MST is available only in Canada.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 12-1-5  
3

**Page-Reference:** 372-37  
3

**Answer:** The youth's case manager is accessible 24 hours a day, 7 days a week.

**54 What is the goal of tertiary intervention strategies?**

to prevent violence from occurring in the first place  
to reduce the frequency of violence  
to reduce the likelihood that the at-risk adolescent will engage in future offending  
to punish  
to include the school to reduce the frequency of violence

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 12-1-54

**Page-Reference:** 373

**Answer:** to reduce the likelihood that the at-risk adolescent will engage in future offending

**55 Which of the following is an example of a tertiary intervention strategy?**

Project Head Start  
Multisystemic Therapy  
SNAP Outreach Project  
Project Restart  
The Grow Academy

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 12-1-55

**Page-Reference:** 373

**Answer:** The Grow Academy

## Chapter 12 Short Answer Questions

1. Provide three criticisms of the Juvenile Delinquents Act (JDA).

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 12-2-01

**Page-Reference:** 346-347

**Answer:** a. Services to be provided to "delinquents" as outlined in the JDA were not always available.  
b. Due to the fact that youth court was so informal, some youths were denied their rights (e.g., right to appeal, right to counsel).  
c. The definition of "delinquency" was very broad and included acts that were not illegal for adults.

2. Compare the key changes to the youth criminal justice system associated with the Juvenile Delinquents Act (JDA), the Young Offenders Act (YOA), and the Youth Criminal Justice Act (YCJA).

**Difficulty:** Hard  
**QuestionID:** 12-2-02  
**Page-Reference:** 346, 348, 350

**Answer:** *Juvenile Delinquents Act (JDA) – see Table 12.1*

- 1) A separate court system for youth was established.
- 2) A minimum age (7 years old) was set for which a child could be charged with a criminal offence.
- 3) Judges had sentencing discretion and sentencing options increased (e.g., foster care, fines, and institutionalization).
- 4) Parents were encouraged to be part of the judicial process.

*Young Offenders Act (YOA) – see Table 12.2*

- 1) Youth are to be held accountable for their actions, however, not to the full extent that adults are.
- 2) The public has the right to be protected from young offenders.
- 3) Young offenders have legal rights and freedoms, including those described in the Canadian Charter of Rights and Freedoms.
- 4) Children have to be at least 12 years of age to be charged with a criminal offence.

*Youth Criminal Justice Act (YCJA) – see Table 12.3*

- 1) Less serious and less violent offences should be kept out of the formal court process.
- 2) The number of extrajudicial measures is increased.
- 3) There is a greater focus on prevention and reintegration into the community.
- 4) Transfers to adult court are removed; instead, youth court judges can impose adult sentences.
- 5) The interests and needs of victims are recognized.

**3. State three main objectives of the Youth Criminal Justice Act.**

**Difficulty:** Moderate  
**QuestionID:** 12-2-03  
**Page-Reference:** 348

- Answer:** a. to prevent youth crime;  
b. to provide meaningful consequences and encourage responsibility of behaviour; and  
c. to improve rehabilitation and reintegration of youth in the community.  
d. students may also include the following: keep young offenders out of the court and out of custody.

**4. Describe the difference between internalizing problems and externalizing problems. Provide**

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 12-2-04

**Page-Reference:** 355

**Answer:** Broadly, children's and youth's emotional and behavioural difficulties can be categorized as internalizing or externalizing problems (Rutter, 1990). **Internalizing problems** are emotional difficulties such as anxiety, depression, and obsessions. **Externalizing problems** are behavioural difficulties such as delinquency, fighting, bullying, lying, and destructive behaviour. Externalizing problems have been considered more difficult to treat and more likely to have long-term persistence (Ebata, Peterson, & Conger, 1990; Robins, 1986). Externalizing disorders have been known to be quite stable, though symptoms are often low in childhood, peak during adolescence, then begin to decrease into adulthood (Leve, Kim, & Pears, 2005; Peterson et al., 2015). Males are more likely to have externalizing difficulties than females (Bongers, Koot, van der Ende, & Verhulst, 2004; Broidy et al., 2003).. It should be noted that internalizing problems might co-occur with externalizing difficulties that should also be assessed and treated.

5. **Three childhood psychiatric diagnoses occur with some frequency in young offenders. Identify the three disorders, describe each, and discuss the relationship between these disorders (i.e., is diagnosis with one type likely to result in the diagnosis with another?).**

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 12-2-05

**Page-Reference:** 355-356

**Answer: a. Attention deficit hyperactivity disorder (ADHD)**

ADHD is described in the *DSM-5* as "a persistent pattern of inattention and/or hyperactivity-impulsivity that interferes with functioning or development, as characterized by (1) inattention and/or (2) hyperactivity and impulsivity" (APA, 2013, p. 59). To qualify for an ADHD diagnosis, a number of symptoms must be present, according to the criteria listed in the *DSM-5*. When making an ADHD diagnosis, it is important to consider the age of the child. In young children, many of the symptoms of ADHD are part of normal development and behaviour and may not lead to criminal activity later on. However, there may be some hyperactive-impulsive or inattentive symptoms before the age of 7 that cause impairment. Many children with ADHD also receive diagnoses of ODD or CD (Harvey, Breau & Lugo-Candelas, 2016; Nock, Kazdin, Hiripi, & Kessler, 2007; Waschbusch, 2002).

**b. Oppositional defiant disorder (ODD)**

ODD is described in the *DSM-5* as "a pattern of angry/irritable mood, argumentative/defiant behavior, or vindictiveness lasting at least 6 months as evidenced by at least four symptoms from any of the [listed] categories, and exhibited during interaction with at least one individual who is not a sibling" (APA, 2013, p. 462). Approximately 40% of children with ODD develop CD (Loeber, Keenan, Lahey, Green, & Thomas, 1993). If a child with ODD qualifies for a CD diagnosis, an ODD diagnosis is not used.

6. **Describe the Offender Risk Assessment and Management System (ORAMS), including the two scales that are used within this system to assess risk with young offenders.**

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 12-2-06

**Page-Reference:** 358

**Answer:** ORAMS is a set of tools developed by Manitoba Corrections to assess the different risks offenders pose. Two scales can be used with young offenders: Inmate Security Assessment and Primary Risk Assessment.

**1) Inmate Security Assessment (ISA)—Young Offenders**

The objective of the ISA is to obtain information to assess a young offender's threat to him- or herself and others in an institution. Dangerous behaviour includes suicide, assaults on other inmates or staff, and escape risk. This scale is completed once an offender has been admitted into an institution for security reasons and also assists decisions relating to institutional placement or transfer.

**2) Primary Risk Assessment (PRA)—Young Offenders**

This scale is a modified version of the Youthful Offender—Level of Service Inventory (YO-LSI). It is used to predict a young offender's risk to reoffend in any type of offence (as opposed to specific types of offences, such as sexual assault). This information is then used to determine the degree and type of supervision needed and to assist in the formulation of a case plan.

7. **Name the two types of adolescent offenders described in the text. Provide two characteristics associated with each type of adolescent offender.**

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 12-2-07

**Page-Reference:** 359

**Answer:** - *Childhood onset offenders (or life-course persistent)*

- a. begin engaging in antisocial behaviour in childhood;
  - b. more serious and persistent antisocial behaviour in later life;
  - c. may have other difficulties like ADHD, learning disabilities, and academic difficulties;
- and

- d. less frequent (i.e. more rare than adolescent onset).

- *Adolescent onset offenders (or adolescent limited)*

8. **What is the difference between reactive aggression and proactive aggression? Which is related to an earlier onset of problems?**

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:**  
12-2-0  
8

**Page-Reference:** 360-36  
1

**Answer:** - *Reactive aggression*: emotionally aggressive response to a perceived threat or frustration.

- *Proactive aggression*: aggression directed at achieving a goal or receiving positive reinforcers.

- Reactive aggressors tend to have an earlier onset of problems than proactive aggressors.

9. **What are the three categories of risk factors for developing psychopathology identified in the text? Provide three examples within each category.**

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:**  
12-2-0  
9

**Page-Reference:** 362-36  
5

**Answer:** - Individual Risk Factors

\* Parent's history of AD/HD or behavioural difficulties (especially for sons);

\* Pregnant woman's use of drugs;

\* Diet;

\* Exposure to high levels of lead;

\* Child's temperament; and

\* Impulsive children.

- Familial Risk Factors

\* Divorce;

\* Familial conflict;

\* Parenting style (e.g., overly strict parents, improper supervision);

\* Parent's who drink heavily;

\* Low socioeconomic status;

\* Large family size; and

\* Parental mental health.

- Cultural and Social Risk Factors

10 **Define "resilient" and identify four ways that protective factors are effective.**

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 12-2-1  
0

**Page-Reference:** 365-36  
6

**Answer:** *Resilient:* characteristic of a child who has multiple risk factors but who does not develop problem behaviours or negative symptoms.

Four ways that protective factors are effective:

- 1) They reduce negative outcomes by changing the risk level of the child's exposure to a risk factor.
- 2) They change the negative chain reaction following exposure to risk.
- 3) They help to develop and maintain self-esteem and self-efficacy.
- 4) They provide opportunities to children that they would not otherwise have.

11 **Describe primary, secondary, and tertiary intervention strategies. Describe an example of each strategy.**

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 12-2-11

**Page-Reference:** 367-373

**Answer:** 1) *Primary intervention strategies:* strategies that are implemented prior to any violence occurring with the goal of decreasing the likelihood that violence will occur later on.

- Examples: Incredible Years Parenting Program or Project Head Start or SNAP Under 12 Outreach Project could be described here (see pages 367-371).

2) *Secondary intervention strategies:* strategies that attempt to reduce the frequency of violence.  
- Example: Multisystemic therapy (see pages 371-373)

3) *Tertiary intervention strategies:* strategies that attempt to prevent violence from reoccurring.  
- Example: Treatment based approaches such as in-patient or residential treatment, community-based treatment, positive rap music in prison program, such as the Grow Academy (see page 373).

**Chapter 13: Intimate Partner  
Violence**

**Chapter 13 Multiple Choice  
Questions**

1. Intimate partner violence consists of physical, sexual, emotional, and \_\_\_\_\_ abuse.

public  
child  
financial  
neglectful  
private

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 13-1-0  
1

**Page-  
Reference:** 376

**Answer:**  
financial

2. \_\_\_\_\_ violence is the term used to refer to any violence occurring between family members.

Intimate partner  
Spousal  
Intrafamilial  
Domestic  
Extrafamilial

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 13-1-0  
2

**Page-Reference:** 376

**Answer:**  
Domestic

3. **Which scale is most commonly used to measure domestic assault?**

Conflict Resolution Scale  
Domestic Battery Scale  
Conflict Tactics Scale  
Peaceful Resolution Scale  
Myths and Realities Scale

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 13-1-0  
3

**Page-Reference:** 376

**Answer:** Conflict Tactics  
Scale

4. **Which of the following is the proper pairing of a Conflict Tactic Scale name and measurement?**

sexual coercion scale – verbal/indirect aggression  
physical assault scale – sexual aggression  
negotiation scale – physical aggression  
psychological scale – constructive problem solving  
injury scale – consequences of aggression

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 13-1-04

**Page-Reference:** 377

**Answer:** injury scale – consequences of aggression

5. **In a meta-analysis of studies using the Conflict Tactics Scale by Archer (2002), which of the following results was true with respect to sex differences in violence?**

Males and females within university samples committed equal amounts of violence.  
Treatment is more effective for male versus female batterers.  
Males are more likely to engage in minor physical aggression, whereas females are more likely to use severe aggression.  
Women are more likely to under-report levels of interpersonal violence relative to men.  
Men seeking treatment are much less likely to have engaged in severe physical violence relative to males mandated to treatment.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 13-1-05

**Page-Reference:** 377

**Answer:** Males and females within university samples committed equal amounts of violence.

6. **According to the meta-analysis study of the Conflict Tactics Scale by Archer (2002):**

men engage in higher rates of severe physical violence than women.  
in university student samples, males and females commit equal amounts of violence.  
victimized males are more likely to underreport abuse than victimized females.  
respondents report fewer violent acts than their partners.  
all of the above.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 13-1-06

**Page-Reference:** 377

**Answer:** all of the above.

**7. Which of the following statements is *true* concerning domestic violence?**

Domestic violence is not a common problem.  
Only heterosexual women get battered.  
Alcohol and/or drugs cause people to act aggressively.  
The most dangerous time for a battered spouse is after separation.  
When a woman gets hit by her partner, she has provoked him in some way.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 13-1-07

**Page-Reference:** 378, Box 13.1

**Answer:** The most dangerous time for a battered spouse is after separation.

**8. Which of the following statements is *false* concerning domestic violence?**

Domestic violence is a common problem.  
Only heterosexual women get battered.  
Alcohol and/or drugs do not cause people to act aggressively.  
The most dangerous time for a battered spouse is after separation.  
Women are safe once they leave a violent relationship.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 13-1-08

**Page-Reference:** 378, Box 13.1

**Answer:** Only heterosexual women get battered.

9. **The Conflict Tactics Scale (CTS) has been criticized for:**

- the way it is presented to respondents.
- failing to provide a full range of violent acts.
- not accounting for gender differences in the consequences of certain acts.
- not assessing the motive for violence.
- all of the above are criticism of the CTS.

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 13-1-0  
9

**Page-Reference:** 378-37  
9

**Answer:** all of the above are criticism of the CTS.

10 **Which of the following is the most frequent type(s) of relationship violence (as measured by Statistics Canada)?**

- threatened to hit, threw something
- pushed, grabbed, shoved, slapped
- kicked, bit, hit, hit with something
- sexually assaulted, beaten, choked, threatened with gun or knife
- robbed at gun point

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 13-1-10

**Page-Reference:** 380

**Answer:** pushed, grabbed, shoved, slapped

11 **Which of the following statements is true concerning reporting interpersonal violence across gay,**

Heterosexual couples are more likely to report intimate partner violence relative to homosexual couples.

Bisexual couples are the most likely to report violence relative to heterosexual and homosexual couples.

Gay or lesbian couples are least likely to report intimate partner violence relative to heterosexual couples.

Bisexual couples are four times less likely to report intimate partner violence relative to homosexual couples.

Women are less likely to report intimate partner violence than men independent of sexual orientation.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 13-1-1  
1

**Page-Reference:** 380

**Answer:** Bisexual couples are the most likely to report violence relative to heterosexual and homosexual couples.

- 12 **According to Statistics Canada (2009-2014), approximately \_\_\_\_\_ cases of intimate partner abuse were reported to the police, and violence against women was \_\_\_\_\_ likely to be reported to the police compared to violence against men.**

50%, less  
20%, more  
75%, more  
10%, less  
40%, more

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 13-1-1  
2

**Page-Reference:** 380

**Answer:** 20%, more

- 13 **The first self-report survey of residents in Canada's territories was done in 2009. In the 12 months prior to the survey, \_\_\_\_\_ reported experiencing violence, and \_\_\_\_\_ of men and women reported**

50%, 50%  
1%, 25%  
4%, 10%  
75%, 90%  
65%, 85%

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 13-1-1  
3

**Page-  
Reference:** 381

**Answer:** 4%,  
10%

14 \_\_\_\_\_ is a set of cultural values and beliefs that support the dominance of women,  
and are thought to contribute to domestic violence.

The male-emotional funnel system  
Observational learning  
Patriarchy  
Marxism  
Selective pressure

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 13-1-14

**Page-  
Reference:** 382

**Answer:**  
Patriarchy

15 Which of the following is *not* a component of social learning  
theory?

patriarchy  
observational learning  
instigators of aggression  
regulators of aggression  
origins of aggression

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 13-1-1  
5

**Page-  
Reference:** 383

**Answer:**  
patriarchy

- 16 Every time a man uses violence against his partner, he gets what he wants. This would be an example of a(n):

external punishment  
observational punishment  
aversive instigator  
incentive instigator  
self-punishment

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 13-1-16

**Page-  
Reference:** 383

**Answer:** incentive  
instigator

- 17 A person feeling remorse for engaging in violence is an example of what type of consequence in social learning theory?

external punishment  
observational punishment  
aversive instigator  
incentive instigator  
self-punishment

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 13-1-17

**Page-Reference:** 383

**Answer:** self-punishment

18 **A person getting arrested for domestic violence is an example of:**

external punishment  
observational punishment  
aversive instigator  
incentive instigator  
self-punishment

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 13-1-18

**Page-Reference:** 383

**Answer:** external punishment

19 **The finding that male batterers are more likely to label many different emotional states as anger is called \_\_\_\_\_.**

the male-emotional funnel system  
observational learning  
patriarchy  
emotional congruence hypothesis  
anger misdiagnosis effect

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 13-1-19

**Page-Reference:** 383

**Answer:** the male-emotional funnel system

20 **The General Social Survey (GSS) in Canada showed that Aboriginal respondents reported more than \_\_\_\_\_ times the amount of intimate partner violence compared to non-Aboriginal respondents over the past 5 year.**

2  
5  
10  
35  
50

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 13-1-20

**Page-Reference:** 361

**Answer:** 2

21 **Aboriginal respondents reported \_\_\_\_\_ experiences with abuse as children than non-Aboriginals, and Aboriginal women are \_\_\_\_\_ likely to contact the police in cases involving intimate partner violence compared to non-Aboriginal women.**

more, less  
more, more  
less, less  
less, more  
similar, less

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

13-1-21

**Page-Reference:**

381

**Answer:** more,  
more

22 The International Dating Violence Study found that \_\_\_\_\_ students were less likely to be perpetrators of serious assaults and sexual coercion as compared with \_\_\_\_\_ students.

older, younger  
national, international  
international, national  
female, male  
male, female

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

13-1-22

**Page-Reference:**

381-382

**Answer:** female,  
male

23 The International Dating Violence Study found that about \_\_\_\_\_ in five Canadian university students reported having experienced physical assault by their dating partner in the last 12 months.

- one
- none
- two
- four
- three

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

13-1-23

**Page-Reference:**

382

**Answer:**

one

24 In the survey by Ewing and Aubrey (1987) examining domestic violence myths, which of the following statements were women more likely to agree with than men?

- The woman can rely on the police to protect her.
- Battering is an isolated event.
- The woman can prevent battering by seeking counselling.
- The battered woman could simply leave her battering husband.
- The female victim "bears at least some responsibility".

**Difficulty:**

Hard

**QuestionID:**

13-1-24

**Page-Reference:**

386

**Answer:** The battered woman could simply leave her battering husband.

25 According to the Violence Against Women Survey (Johnson, 1996), the majority of women who left their abusive partners returned home at least once for all of the following reasons except:

for the sake of the children.  
because the partner promised to change.  
a lack of money or no place to go.  
to give the relationship another chance.  
emotional dependency on the abuser.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 13-1-25

**Page-Reference:** 386-387

**Answer:** emotional dependency on the abuser.

26 Which of the following factors has *not* been identified as a reason for which battered women stay in abusive relationships or delay leaving their abusive partner?

sadistic personality traits  
economic dependency  
concern for one's pet  
threats made by abusive partner  
none of the above (i.e., all of the above have been identified as reasons why battered women stay in abusive relationships)

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 13-1-26

**Page-Reference:** 387

**Answer:** sadistic personality traits

27 In a study of variables associated with women's decision to stay or leave after being physically assaulted by their partner, Kim and Gray (2008) reported that the decision to leave was dependent on all of the following except:

self-esteem  
level of fear  
locus of control  
availability of social support  
financial dependence

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 13-1-2  
7

**Page-  
Reference:** 387

**Answer:** availability of social  
support

28 **Which type of male batterer is most likely to exhibit  
jealousy?**

the family-only batterer  
the dysphoric/borderline batterer  
the generally violent/antisocial batterer  
the psychopathic batterer  
the antisocial batterer

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 13-1-28

**Page-  
Reference:** 387

**Answer:** the dysphoric/borderline  
batterer

29 **Recent studies suggest that women may delay leaving a violent relationship due  
to:**

concern for their pets.  
wanting to prove they can handle it.  
embarrassment  
a sadistic personality.  
seeking repentance and closure.

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 13-1-2  
9

**Page-  
Reference:** 389

**Answer:** concern for their  
pets.

30 **Which type of male batterer is least likely to report negative attitudes supportive of violence?**

the family-only batterer  
the dysphoric/borderline batterer  
the generally violent/antisocial batterer  
the psychopathic batterer  
the antisocial batterer

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 13-1-30

**Page-  
Reference:** 390

**Answer:** the family-only  
batterer

31 **Three types of male batterers have been identified by the empirical literature. The \_\_\_\_\_ batterer engages in \_\_\_\_\_ levels of violence, and has a history of \_\_\_\_\_.**

family-only, severe, substance abuse  
dysphoric-borderline, minimal, depression  
generally violent-antisocial, severe, substance abuse  
dysphoric-borderline, minimal, anger problems  
family-only, moderate, substance abuse

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 13-1-31

**Page-Reference:** 390

**Answer:** generally violent-antisocial, severe, substance abuse

**32 Which three phases comprise Lenore Walker's Cycle of Violence model?**

friends, conflict, violence  
honeymoon, tension-building, acting-out  
faking, violence, forgiveness  
forming, storming, norming  
forming, conflict, regret

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 13-1-32

**Page-Reference:** 387

**Answer:** honeymoon, tension-building, acting-out

**33 Grayson is very jealous of his partner Brad, and has a history of depression and self-esteem problems. He is frequently preoccupied with his own problems and feels Brad doesn't pay enough attention to him. He often lashes out at Brad without cause to make himself feel better and more in control of his emotions. Grayson would be classified as what type of male batterer?**

family-only batterer  
antisocial batterer  
psychopathic batterer  
extrafamilial batterer  
dysphoric/borderline batterer

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 13-1-3  
3

**Page-  
Reference:** 390

**Answer:** dysphoric/borderline  
batterer

34 In the short term (i.e., six months or less), which of the following male perpetrators of domestic assault is *least* likely to reoffend?

an unemployed male who is arrested.  
an employed male who is arrested.  
a male who is given a separation order.  
a male who is subjected to mediation by police.  
there are no significant differences in reoffending rates of men.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 13-1-34

**Page-  
Reference:** 391

**Answer:** an employed male who is  
arrested.

35 In a study of police responses to spousal violence by Sherman and Berk (1984), the lowest levels of recidivism were associated with what police response?

separation  
arrest  
mediation  
probation  
warning

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

13-1-35

**Page-Reference:**

369

**Answer:**

arrest

36 **What is one consequence of mandatory arrest policies for domestic assault?**

a decrease in arrest rates for domestic assault  
no change in the number of men ordered by the court to attend treatment  
an increase in dual arrests  
a decrease in the number of females arrested for domestic assault  
an increase in family assaults

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

13-1-36

**Page-Reference:**

392

**Answer:** an increase in dual arrests

37 **What are the two most common forms of treatment for male batterers?**

feminist psychoeducational group therapy and cognitive-behavioural therapy  
cognitive-behavioural therapy and anger management  
feminist psychoeducational group therapy and couples therapy  
couples therapy and anger management  
cognitive-behavioural therapy and couples therapy

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 13-1-3  
7

**Page-Reference:** 393-39  
4

**Answer:** feminist psychoeducational group therapy and cognitive-behavioural therapy

38 Which of the following is *not* a criticism of the Duluth model for the treatment of domestic violence offenders?

Focus is primarily on the violence of men against women.  
Violence is seen as being one-sided and not an interaction between people.  
Focus is on offering alternatives to violence like anger management.  
There is limited focus on changing the man's attitudes about power and control in relationships.  
It is difficult to form a therapeutic bond with client.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 13-1-38

**Page-Reference:** 393-394

**Answer:** Focus is on offering alternatives to violence like anger management.

39 The crime that involves repeatedly following, communicating with, or watching another person is called:

threatening with intent  
criminal harassment  
attempted assault  
obstruction of justice  
none of the above

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 13-1-3  
9

**Page-  
Reference:** 394

**Answer:** criminal  
harassment

40 **The National Family Violence Prevention Programs developed by the Correctional Service of Canada include all of the following components except:**

attitudes  
relapse prevention  
cognition and memory  
management of emotions  
skills building

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 13-1-4  
0

**Page-  
Reference:** 395

**Answer:** cognition and  
memory

41 **In a recent evaluation of the Moderate Intensity Family Violence Prevention Program, Connors, Mills, and Gray (2012) reported that \_\_\_\_\_ appeared to be a key factor in reducing domestic and violent recidivism and results in better engagement with treatment.**

motivation  
attitudes towards spousal violence  
social support  
financial stability  
intelligence

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 13-1-4  
1

**Page-Reference:** 395

**Answer:**  
motivation

42 Which of the following is *not* a component of the Correctional Service of Canada's Family Violence Prevention Programs?

motivation  
education  
attitudes  
management  
attrition

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 13-1-4  
2

**Page-Reference:** 395

**Answer:**  
attrition

43 In evaluating the Family Violence Prevention Programs, Stewart, Gabora, Kropp, and Lee (2005) found that:

the programs did not affect participants' level of jealousy.  
treatment completers had more negative attitudes about relationships.  
treatment completers had lower levels of empathy.  
participants felt that the programs were useless.  
treatment completers were less likely to be arrested for spousal assault after six months.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 13-1-43

**Page-Reference:** 395

**Answer:** treatment completers were less likely to be arrested for spousal assault after six months.

44 Which type of treatment for male offenders was found to be most effective in the meta-analysis conducted by Babcock, Green, and Robie (2004)?

Duluth model  
cognitive-behavioural  
couples therapy  
feminist group therapy  
castration

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 13-1-44

**Page-Reference:** 396

**Answer:**  
castration

45 According to Bowen and Gilchrist (2006) which participant characteristics predicted program attrition?

older age  
self-reported motivation  
having served a previous prison sentence  
having participated in previous treatment  
confidence in goal achievement

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 13-1-45

**Page-Reference:** 396

**Answer:** having served a previous prison sentence

46 According to the General Social Survey (GSS), \_\_\_\_\_ percentage of women reported being stalked in the past 5 years in a way that made them fear for their safety?

6%  
11%  
16%  
21%  
26%

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 13-1-46

**Page-Reference:** 397

**Answer:** 11%

47 Which of the following statements is *true* concerning criminal harassment (i.e., stalking)?

Men are more likely to be victims of harassment than women.  
Stalking is most likely to occur after a romantic relationship has ended.  
Most people are harassed by strangers.  
Women are more likely to underreport being victims of harassment than men.  
Most stalking victims do not know their stalkers.

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 13-1-4  
7

**Page-Reference:** 398

**Answer:** Stalking is most likely to occur after a romantic relationship has ended.

48 **What two variables are associated with the greatest risk that an offender will continue stalking behaviour once released from prison?**

history of stalking and personality disorder  
history of substance abuse and presence of threats  
absence of psychotic disorder and former intimate relationship with victim  
personality disorder and history of substance abuse  
history of substance abuse and history of stalking behaviour

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 13-1-48

**Page-Reference:** 398

**Answer:** personality disorder and history of substance abuse

49 **Victims of stalking are more likely to experience:**

depression  
intense stress  
sleep problems  
problems at work  
all of the above

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 13-1-4  
9

**Page-  
Reference:** 398

**Answer:** all of the  
above

50 **According to the McFarlane, Campbell, and Watson (2002) study on the homicide of intimate partners:**

stalking was equally common in all groups.  
stalking was more common in the attempted femicide group only.  
stalking was more common in the actual femicide group only.  
stalking was more common in the control group.  
stalking was more common in both the attempted and actual femicide groups.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 13-1-50

**Page-  
Reference:** 398

**Answer:** stalking was more common in both the attempted and actual femicide groups.

51 **The most common type of stalker is the:**

ex-intimate stalker  
love-obsessional stalker  
delusional stalker  
grudge stalker  
psychopathic stalker

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 13-1-5  
1

**Page-Reference:** 399

**Answer:** ex-intimate  
stalker

52 **A stalker who has never had an intimate relationship with the victim but does not suffer from psychosis would be classified as:**

ex-intimate stalker  
love-obsessional stalker  
delusional stalker  
grudge stalker  
psychopathic stalker

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 13-1-52

**Page-Reference:** 399

**Answer:** love-obsessional  
stalker

53 **Which of the following is *not* a type of stalker as defined by Kropp, Hart, and Lyon (2002)?**

ex-intimate stalker  
love-obsessional stalker  
delusional stalker  
grudge stalker  
psychopathic stalker

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 13-1-5  
3

**Page-  
Reference:** 399

**Answer:** psychopathic  
stalker

- 54 **Marlon is an angry individual who feels that women always overlook "the good guy". After being rejected by a girl at the bar who refused to go on home with him, he followed her home and continues to follow her around her home and work locations to teach her a lesson and show her what she is missing. What type of stalker would Marlon be classified as?**

ex-intimate stalker  
love-obsessional stalker  
delusional stalker  
grudge stalker  
psychopathic stalker

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 13-1-54

**Page-  
Reference:** 399

**Answer:** grudge  
stalker

- 55 **According to a survey of Canadian federal and provincial politicians, which of the following is one of the most common forms of communication used by stalkers?**

telephone calls  
text messages  
face-to-face communication  
letters sent by regular mail  
via a third-party individual

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 13-1-5  
5

**Page-Reference:** 399

**Answer:** telephone  
calls

56 In a study of stalking amongst Canadian physicians (doctors), Abrams and Robinson (2011) reported that \_\_\_\_\_ have the highest prevalence of being stalked.

neurologists  
psychiatrists  
dentists  
psychologists  
obstetricians

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 13-1-56

**Page-Reference:** 401

**Answer:**  
psychiatrists

**Chapter 13 Short Answer Questions**

1. **The Conflict Tactics Scale (CTS; Straus, 1979) and the updated CTS2 (Straus et al., 1996), a scale used to measure domestic assault, has been criticized on many grounds. List the four criticisms specified in your text.**

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 13-2-01

**Page-Reference:** 378-379

**Answer:** - The CTS is introduced by asking respondents to focus on how they settle disputes; however, many acts of violence are not precipitated by an argument, and therefore may go unreported.  
- The CTS does not include the full range of violent acts (e.g., sexual aggression is excluded).  
- The CTS does not consider the different consequences of the same aggressive act for men and women (e.g., greater injury generally occurs when a man punches a woman than vice versa).  
- The CTS does not account for motive of violence (i.e., offensive versus defensive).

2. **Name and briefly describe the three components included in Albert Bandura's social learning theory of intimate violence.**

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 13-2-02

**Page-Reference:** 383

**Answer:** - *Origins of aggression:* a repertoire of aggressive behaviours acquired through observational learning (through observation of cultural norms, family members, television, etc.)  
- *Instigators of aggression:* event in the environment that acts as a stimulus for aggressive behaviour (i.e., aversive instigators produce emotional arousal and incentive instigators offer rewards for aggression)  
- *Regulators of aggression:* assumes that behaviour is regulated by its consequences (e.g., internal or external punishment); thus, if negative consequences outweigh the rewards of engaging in aggressive behaviour, aggression should diminish.

3. **Name and briefly describe the levels that influence intimate violence in the nested ecological model proposed by Dutton (1995). Provide one example for each level.**

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 13-2-0  
3

**Page-Reference:** 385

**Answer:** - *Macrosystem*. This level is the sets of societal and cultural beliefs and attitudes.

*Example:* patriarchy and social norms that condone or promote gender inequality, male domination, and aggression  
- *Exosystem*. This level considers the societal structures that connect the individual to the wider society (e.g., social supports, employment, friends), which can influence the likelihood of intimate violence.

*Example:* job stress or unemployment can increase likelihood of violence, whereas family or friends who provide emotional support or corrective feedback can decrease the likelihood of violence.

- *Microsystem*. This focuses of the immediate environment in which abuse occurs.

*Example:* couple's pattern of communication or level of conflict, or each spouse's method of coping with conflict.

- *Ontogenic level*. This level focuses on the psychological and biological features of the individual.

*Example:* individual's abuse history, exposure to violent models, and abilities to manage emotions.

4. **Name and briefly describe the three-phase cycle of abuse proposed by Lenore Walker (1979). Discuss what happens at each phase.**

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 13-2-04

**Page-Reference:** 386-387

**Answer:** Walker (1979) proposed that there is a three-phase cycle of abuse that occurs. First, there is a tension-building phase occurring prior to the assault with increasing conflict and stress between partners. Second, there is the acting-out phase when the batterer engages in intimate partner violence. Third, there is the honeymoon phase, when the batterer apologizes and often promises not to engage in future violence. According to Walker, the cycle repeats itself with the honeymoon phase sometimes disappearing.

Figure 13.1 illustrates the cycle of violence phases. Tension-building: interpersonal tension, poor communication, victim feels fearful. Acting-out: violent, abusive incident occurs. Honeymoon: abuser apologizes, affection between partners, calm, lack of tension.

5. **Holtzworth-Munroe and Stuart (1994) developed a typology of male batterers based on the severity**

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 13-2-05

**Page-Reference:** 390

**Answer:** - *Family-only batterer*: a male spousal batterer who is typically not violent outside the home, does not show much psychopathology, and does not possess negative attitudes supportive of violence  
- *Dysphoric/borderline batterer*: a male spousal batterer who exhibits some violence outside the family, is depressed and has borderline personality traits, and has problems with jealousy  
- *Generally violent/antisocial batterer*: a male spousal batterer who is violent outside the home, engages in other criminal acts, has drug and alcohol problems, has impulse-control problems, and possesses violence-supportive beliefs

6. **Identify and explain the two most common forms of intervention for male batterers. According to the meta-analysis conducted by Babcock, Green, and Robie (2004), which is the most effective in terms of recidivism?**

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 13-2-06

**Page-Reference:** 393-394, 396

**Answer:** - *Duluth model (feminist psychoeducational group therapy)*: group therapy focusing on challenging the man's perceived right to control his partner; this model is based on the premise that the primary cause of domestic violence is patriarchal ideology  
- *Cognitive-behavioural therapy*: group therapy focusing on the costs of engaging in violence and learning alternative to violence; according to this model, violence is a learned behaviour and use of violence is reinforcing for the offender  
- According to the meta-analysis comparing the Duluth model, cognitive-behavioural and other types of treatment, there were no differences in efficacy in terms of recidivism rates

7. **The National Family Violence Prevention Programs developed by the Correctional Service of Canada contain 6 components. Name and briefly describe each of these, and discuss which component has been associated with the best treatment outcomes in research.**

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 13-2-0  
7

**Page-Reference:** 394-39  
5

**Answer:** The programs include the following components:

- *Motivation*. Addresses the offender's level of motivation to change
- *Education*. Provides information about the prevalence of intimate violence and the range of abusive behaviours
- *Attitudes*. Recognizes the attitudes and beliefs that condone abusive patterns
- *Management of emotions*. Provides skills training in controlling feelings of jealousy, anger, and fear of relationship loss
- *Skills building*. Provides training on the social and communication skills that underlie healthy relationships, such as negotiation and responding appropriately to criticism
- *Relapse prevention*. Develops avoidance strategies to sidestep high-risk situations and coping plans for use when the high-risk situation cannot be avoided

Motivation is considered to be a critical factor in enhancing treatment outcomes. In a recent evaluation of the MIFVPP, Conners, Mills, and Gray (2012) found that incarcerated male batterers who were more motivated learned the skills faster and were more engaged with treatment than less motivated offenders.

8. **According to Rosenfeld (2004), what variables are significantly related to violence amongst stalkers (relative to those who pose a low risk of behaving violently)? What two factors are specifically associated with the greatest risk for continuing stalking behaviour after release from prison?**

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 13-2-08

**Page-Reference:** 398

**Answer:** The following variables were significantly related to violence:

- *Clinical variables*. Substance-abuse disorder, personality disorder, and the absence of a psychotic disorder predicted violence.
- *Case-related variables*. A former intimate relationship between offender and victim and threats toward the victim predicted violence.

Stalking offenders who are at the greatest risk for continuing stalking behaviour after release from prison are those who have both a personality disorder and a history of substance abuse (Rosenfeld, 2004 ).

9. **Kropp, Hart, and Lyon (2002) have formulated a typology that classifies stalkers into four categories based on their relationships with their victims. Name and describe the key characteristics of all four categories.**

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 13-2-09

**Page-Reference:** 399

**Answer:** - *Ex-intimate stalker*: most common type; engages in stalking after intimate relationship breaks up; is an individual who is disgruntled or estranged, and unable to let go of his/her partner; has a history of domestic violence in intimate relationships

- *Love-obsessional stalker*: rare type; is an individual who has never had an intimate relationship with the victim but has been an acquaintance or co-worker; has intense emotional feelings for the victim; does not have symptoms of depression or psychosis

- *Delusional stalker*: rare type; is an individual who has never had any relationship with the victim, but believes that a relationship exists; sometimes targets a politician, media figure, or celebrity; is often diagnosed with delusional disorders, schizophrenia, or bipolar disorder

- *Grudge stalker*: rare type; is an individual who knows the victim but has not had an intimate relationship with the victim; is an angry individual seeking revenge for a perceived injustice

**Chapter 14: Sexual Offenders**

**Chapter 14 Multiple Choice Questions**

1. Which of the following is *not* true regarding sexual offence statistics?

In 2011 the rate of sex offences per 100,000 population was 50,000.  
Official statistics do not provide an accurate estimate of the true incidence of sex offences.  
Children and youth have high victimization rates.  
The majority of victims do not report sexual offences to the police.  
In over all of incidences involving sexual assault, the victim previously knew their attacker.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 14-1-01

**Page-Reference:** 404

**Answer:** In 2011 the rate of sex offences per 100,000 population was 50,000.

2. Perreault's (2015) study using data from the General Social Survey found that in 2014, \_\_\_\_\_ of adult sexual assault victims did not report the assault to the police.

1%  
10%  
75%  
95%  
50%

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 14-1-02

**Page-Reference:** 404

**Answer:**  
95%

3. **All of the following reasons have been found concerning why child victims do not report being sexually abused except:**

they are afraid of what will happen to them or their parents.  
they believe they are to blame for the abuse.  
they are not aware that what was happening was wrong.  
they are protecting a family member.  
they don't think they will be believed.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 14-1-03

**Page-Reference:** 404-405

**Answer:** they are protecting a family member.

4. **The prevalence of childhood sexual abuse is highest for:**

males  
females  
children aged 0-5  
children aged 6-11  
post-pubescent children

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 14-1-04

**Page-Reference:** 405

**Answer:**  
females

5. **Which of the following types of sexual assault has the most serious maximum penalty?**

- simple sexual assault
- aggravated sexual assault
- voyeurism
- exhibitionism
- sexual assault with a weapon

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:**  
14-1-0  
5

**Page-Reference:** 405-40  
6

**Answer:** aggravated sexual assault

6. **Sexual assault with a weapon or causing bodily harm carries what maximum sentence in Canada?**

- 2 years
- 5 years
- 10 years
- 14 years
- life imprisonment

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:**  
14-1-0  
6

**Page-Reference:** 405-406

**Answer:** 14 years

7. Which of the following is/are common consequence(s) of rape?

- sexual problems
- anxiety
- depression
- self-blame
- all of the above

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 14-1-07

**Page-Reference:** 406

**Answer:** all of the above

8. \_\_\_\_\_ refers to a group of symptoms or behaviours that are frequent after-effects of having been raped.

- Post-traumatic stress disorder
- Acute psychosis
- Chronic reactivity
- Rape trauma syndrome
- Victimization syndrome

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 14-1-08

**Page-Reference:** 406

**Answer:** Rape trauma syndrome

9. **According to the DSM-5, post-traumatic stress disorder (PTSD) includes all of the following symptom clusters except:**

reoccurring distressing memories  
negative alterations in moods and cognitions  
exaggeration and confabulation of physical ailments  
avoidance of stimuli  
marked alterations in arousal and reactivity

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 14-1-09

**Page-Reference:** 406

**Answer:** exaggeration and confabulation of physical ailments

10 **Which of the following statements is true regarding rape myths?**

Rape myths are beliefs people have about rape that are based on empirical evidence.  
Asian students are the least likely to accept rape myths.  
Men are more accepting of rape myths than women are.  
One common rape myth is that sex offences are often committed by people the victim knows.  
Sexual assault is vastly over-reported.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 14-1-10

**Page-Reference:** 407

**Answer:** Men are more accepting of rape myths than women are.

11 Which of the following is not a myth associated with sexual assault?

- Sexual assault is most often committed by someone you know.
- Sexual assault is not a common problem.
- Women who are sexually assaulted are "asking for it" by the way they dress or act.
- Women lie about sexual assault.
- Avoid being alone in dark or deserted places as this will protect you from being sexually assaulted.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 14-1-11

**Page-Reference:** 407

**Answer:** Sexual assault is most often committed by someone you know.

12 Obtaining sexual gratification by watching others naked, undressing, or engaging in sexual activity is called:

- fetishism
- exhibitionism
- voyeurism
- frotteurism
- necrophilia

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 14-1-12

**Page-Reference:** 407-408

**Answer:** voyeurism

13 Casey is known to the police for being an individual that likes to expose his genitals to people in

fetishist  
exhibitionist  
voyeur  
frotteur  
necrophiliac

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 14-1-1  
3

**Page-  
Reference:** 408

**Answer:**  
exhibitionist

14 Which of the following refers to someone who sexually abuses children not related to him or her?

intra-familial child molester  
exhibitionist  
extra-familial child molester  
voyeur  
pedophile

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 14-1-14

**Page-  
Reference:** 408

**Answer:** extra-familial child  
molester

15 In general, research on the outcomes of resisting sexual attacks has found that:

Forceful resistance strategies (verbal or physical) increase the likelihood of rape completion. Women who resist rape in any way are more likely to suffer injuries relative to women who don't resist.

Non-forceful resistance strategies (pleading, crying, reasoning with the offender) increase the likelihood of rape completion.

There is no association between victim resistance and the likelihood of rape completion.

Women who resisted rapes when the offender had a weapon suffered less physical injuries.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 14-1-1  
5

**Page-Reference:** 408

**Answer:** Non-forceful resistance strategies (pleading, crying, reasoning with the offender) increase the likelihood of rape completion.

16 **According to Groth's rapist typology, which type of rapist has the intention to assert dominance and control over the victim?**

anger  
vindictive  
power  
sadistic  
opportunistic

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 14-1-16

**Page-Reference:** 409

**Answer:** power

17 **According to Groth's rapist typology, which type of rapist is not motivated primarily by sexual gratification?**

anger  
vindictive  
fixated  
sadistic  
regressed

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

14-1-17

**Page-Reference:**

409

**Answer:**

anger

- 18 According to the Revised Rapist Typology (MTC:R3), which type of rapist is primarily motivated by sexual preoccupation or sexual fantasies?

pervasively angry  
sadistic  
vindictive  
sexual  
opportunistic

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

14-1-18

**Page-Reference:**

409

**Answer:**

sexual

- 19 According to the Revised Rapist Typology (MTC:R3), which type of rapist exhibits a high degree of anger directed solely at women?

pervasively angry  
sadistic  
vindictive  
sexual  
opportunistic

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

14-1-19

**Page-Reference:**

409

**Answer:**

vindictive

- 20 Frederick was engaging in a break and enter to steal valuables, but encountered an attractive female occupant and decided to rape her. According to the Revised Rapist Typology (MTC:R3), which type of rapist would Frederick be classified as?

pervasively angry  
sadistic  
vindictive  
sexual  
opportunistic

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

14-1-20

**Page-Reference:**

409

**Answer:**

opportunistic

- 21 Jayson is an impulsive man who has engaged in several rapes. During these attacks, he often uses unnecessary force to teach his victim a lesson resulting in serious victim injuries, but he does not have sexual fantasies about his crimes. According to the Revised Rapist Typology (MTC:R3), which type of rapist would Jayson be classified as?

pervasively angry  
sadistic  
vindictive  
sexual  
opportunistic

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 14-1-21

**Page-Reference:** 409

**Answer:** pervasively  
angry

22 According to Groth's rapist typology, which type of rapist obtains sexual gratification by hurting the victim?

anger  
vindictive  
power  
sadistic  
opportunistic

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 14-1-22

**Page-Reference:** 410

**Answer:**  
sadistic

23 Which of the following is one of the features of regressed child molesters?

Their sexual interest in children begins in adulthood.  
Their offences are planned.  
Male children are their primary targets.  
They are emotionally immature.  
They often feel no remorse over their behaviour.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 14-1-23

**Page-Reference:** 410

**Answer:** Their sexual interest in children begins in adulthood.

**24 Which of the following is not one of the features of the fixated child molester?**

Their sexual interest in children begins in adolescence and is persistent.  
Their offences are planned.  
Male children are their primary targets.  
They are emotionally immature.  
They usually have a history of alcohol or drug abuse.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 14-1-24

**Page-Reference:** 410

**Answer:** They usually have a history of alcohol or drug abuse.

**25 Jerome is a sexual offender who preys on female children, often when his adult relationships fail. He often is drunk when the offending happens and feels regret for his actions after the fact. What type of sexual offender is Jerome per Groth's typology?**

immature rapist  
regressed child molester  
fixated child molester  
impulsive rapist  
exploitative rapist

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 14-1-2  
5

**Page-  
Reference:** 410

**Answer:** regressed child  
molester

26 **Which type of child molester is most likely to target male children?**

immature rapist  
regressed child molester  
fixated child molester  
sex-pressure molesters  
sex-force molesters

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 14-1-26

**Page-  
Reference:** 410

**Answer:** regressed child  
molester

27 **Which of the following statements is true regarding adolescent sexual offenders?**

Adolescent sexual offenders are often victims of sexual abuse themselves.  
The majority of sexually abused children go on to become adolescent or adult sexual offenders.  
Prior history of childhood sexual victimization is related to sexual recidivism in adolescence and adulthood.

Adolescent sexual offenders tend to victimize adult females.  
The majority of those tried for sexual assault were female.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 14-1-27

**Page-Reference:** 412

**Answer:** Adolescent sexual offenders are often victims of sexual abuse themselves.

- 28 In a recent meta-analysis by Seto and Lalumière (2010), adolescent sex offenders were found to be similar to other adolescent offenders on the majority of risk factors, except for the following additional risk factors present in adolescent sexual offenders:

education, lack of parental supervision, atypical sexual interests.  
video game use, exposure to pornography, lack of parental supervision.  
history of sexual abuse, exposure to pornography, atypical sexual interests.  
history of sexual abuse, education level, sexual rejection.  
sexual rejection, atypical sexual interests, poor socialization.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 14-1-28

**Page-Reference:** 412

**Answer:** history of sexual abuse, exposure to pornography, atypical sexual interests.

- 29 Research by Beck, Boys, Rose, and Beck (2012) on rape myth acceptance on video games has reported the following relationship:

Video games that depict violence against women lead to decreased acceptance of rape myths.  
Video games that depict prosocial attitudes towards women lead to decreased acceptance of rape myths.  
Video games that depict objectification of women and violence towards women lead to increased rape-myth attitudes.  
Video games depicting violence against women decrease levels of real-life aggression against women exhibited.  
There is no relationship between video game play and acceptance of rape myths.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 14-1-2  
9

**Page-Reference:** 413

**Answer:** Video games that depict objectification of women and violence towards women lead to increased rape-myth attitudes.

- 30 **Mary is a middle-aged woman who has been convicted of two counts of sexual assault on her own five-year-old son. She has a history of childhood sexual abuse and prior to the sexual assaults she was living with an abusive male spouse. Mary would likely be classified as what type of female sex offender?**

family-only  
male-coerced  
predisposed  
teacher/lover  
borderline/dysphoric

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 14-1-30

**Page-Reference:** 414

**Answer:** predisposed

- 31 **With her husband Peter, Paula has engaged in sexual abuse against their own children as well as children that she provides daycare services for. Paula would most likely be classified as what type of female sexual offender?**

male-accompanied  
male-coerced  
predisposed  
teacher/lover  
borderline/dysphoric

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 14-1-31

**Page-Reference:** 414

**Answer:** male-accompanied

32 Jennifer's husband Frank is abusive and forces Jennifer to engage in sexual abuse against their daughter. Jennifer would most likely be classified as what type of female sexual offender?

male-accompanied  
male-coerced  
predisposed  
Teacher/love group  
borderline/dysphoric

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 14-1-32

**Page-Reference:** 414

**Answer:** male-coerced

33 Evolutionary theories of sexual offending focus on:

the offender's ability to overcome a child's resistance  
the offender's level of maturity  
how sexual offending may be a way of enhancing  
reproductive success  
childhood experiences  
emotional dysregulation

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 14-1-33

**Page-Reference:** 417

**Answer:** how sexual offending may be a way of enhancing reproductive success

34 Which of the following is not one of Finkelhor's (1984) preconditions of sexual offending?

motivation to sexually abuse  
emotional and sexual arousal  
lack of internal inhibitions  
lack of external inhibitions  
overcoming the child's resistance

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 14-1-34

**Page-Reference:** 417

**Answer:** emotional and sexual arousal

35 In their integrated model of sexual aggression, Marshall and Barbaree (1990) proposed that sexually aggressive behaviours result from a combination of all the following factors except:

childhood experiences  
biological factors  
cognitions and attitudes  
sociocultural influences  
situational events

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 14-1-35

**Page-Reference:** 417

**Answer:** cognitions and attitudes

36 **What term refers to deviant cognitions, values, or beliefs that are used to justify or minimize deviant behaviours?**

substance-abuse problems  
cognitive distortions  
socioeconomic status  
victim empathy  
minimizations

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 14-1-36

**Page-Reference:** 419

**Answer:** minimizations

37 **Which of the following is *not* typically a target in the treatment of sexual offenders?**

substance-abuse problems  
cognitive distortions  
socioeconomic status  
victim empathy  
minimizations

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 14-1-3  
7

**Page-Reference:** 419

**Answer:** socioeconomic  
status

38 **Some researchers provide evidence that \_\_\_\_\_ is related to increased sexual recidivism in low-risk sexual offenders.**

substance-abuse problems  
cognitive distortions  
denial  
victim empathy  
minimizations

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 14-1-38

**Page-Reference:** 419

**Answer:**  
denial

39 **Which of the following statements is an example of a cognitive distortion exhibited by a sexual offender?**

Having sex with a child in a loving relationship is a good way to teach a child about sex.  
I was drunk and I didn't know what I was doing.  
The victim wanted to have sex with me.  
The victim didn't really suffer so it wasn't wrong.  
The victim didn't explicitly ever tell me "no".

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 14-1-3  
9

**Page-  
Reference:** 419

**Answer:** Having sex with a child in a loving relationship is a good way to teach a child about sex.

40 **Which of the following social skills have been found to be lacking in sexual offenders?**

self-confidence  
capacity for intimacy  
assertiveness  
dealing with anger  
all of the above are social skills that are lacking

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 14-1-4  
0

**Page-  
Reference:** 421

**Answer:** all of the above are social skills that are lacking

41 \_\_\_\_\_ typically show phallometric responses that are similar to those of non-offenders.

Pedophiles  
Intra-familial child molesters  
Extra-familial child molesters  
Sadistic rapists  
Male-coerced child molesters

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 14-1-4  
1

**Page-Reference:** 421

**Answer:** Intra-familial child molesters

- 42 The \_\_\_\_\_ approach has been used to pair the inability to become sexually aroused to deviant fantasies when required to ejaculate to non-deviant fantasies first.

penile phallometry  
aversion therapy  
masturbatory satiation  
chemical castration  
ejaculatory inhibition

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 14-1-42

**Page-Reference:** 422

**Answer:** masturbatory satiation

- 43 The treatment approach that attempts to reduce recidivism among sex offenders by increasing self-awareness of factors that place them at high risk to reoffend and teaching them how to manage these high-risk situations is called:

behavioural reconditioning  
reinforcement contingency training  
relapse prevention  
empathy training  
aversion therapy

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 14-1-43

**Page-Reference:** 422

**Answer:** relapse prevention

44 In the context of relapse prevention, any occurrence of fantasizing about sexual offending would be considered:

a lapse  
a relapse  
an abstinence violation effect  
a coping response  
an offence

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 14-1-44

**Page-Reference:** 423

**Answer:** a lapse

45 In the context of relapse prevention, interpreting a lapse as an irreversible failure is an example of:

a lapse  
a relapse  
an abstinence violation effect  
a coping response  
an offence

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 14-1-45

**Page-Reference:** 423

**Answer:** an abstinence violation effect

46 According to a meta-analysis conducted by Hanson et al. (2002), which of the following statements is *false* regarding the treatment of sex offenders?

Newer treatments like cognitive behavioural therapy are more effective than older forms of treatment.

Treatment is significantly more effective with adolescent sex offenders than with adult sex offenders.

Both community and institutional treatment are associated with a decrease in recidivism.

Sex offenders who drop out of treatment programs have higher recidivism rates than those who complete treatment programs.

Sex offenders who refuse any form of treatment have higher recidivism rates than those who complete treatment programs.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 14-1-46

**Page-Reference:** 424

**Answer:** Treatment is significantly more effective with adolescent sex offenders than with adult sex offenders.

47 In a study by Olver, Stockdale, and Wormith (2011), treatment attrition in sexual offenders is related to all the following variables except:

denial  
negative treatment attitudes  
number of prior offences  
level of motivation  
affective disorders

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 14-1-47

**Page-Reference:** 425

**Answer:** affective disorders

#### Chapter 14 Short Answer Questions

1. **Identify and discuss the five main myths associated with sexual assault discussed in the text, including facts that challenge these false beliefs.**

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 14-2-01

**Page-Reference:** 407

**Answer: Myth 1: Sexual assault is not a common problem.**

One in every four women and one in every six men have experienced some type of sexual assault. You likely know someone who has been sexually assaulted.

**Myth 2: Sexual assault is most often committed by strangers.**

Women face the greatest risk of sexual assault from men they know, not from strangers. About half of all rapes occur in dating relationships. In about 60% of cases, victims of sexual assault knew the attacker.

**Myth 3: Women who are sexually assaulted "ask for it" by the way they dress or act.**

Victims of sexual assault range across the age span (from infants to elderly), and sexual assaults can occur in almost

2. **Knight and Prentky (1990) developed the Revised Rapist Typology (MTC: R3) which consists of five primary subtypes of rapists. Name and briefly define each of these types of rapists, focusing on each rapist's motivational differences.**

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 14-2-0  
2

**Page-Reference:** 408-40  
9

**Answer: 1)** The opportunistic type commits sexual assault that is generally impulsive, void of sexual fantasies, controlled primarily by situational or contextual factors, and void of gratuitous violence. These offenders often engage in other criminal behaviours. For example, a rapist who breaks into a home with the intention of stealing but who rapes the female occupant could be classified as opportunistic.

**2)** The pervasively angry type has a high level of anger that is directed toward both men and women. These offenders tend to be impulsive, use unnecessary force, cause serious victim injury, and be void of sexual fantasies.

**3)** The sexual type is distinguished from the other types in that these offenders' crimes are primarily motivated by sexual preoccupation or sexual fantasies.

**4)** The sadistic type is differentiated from the sexual type in that there must be a sadistic element to the offence.

**5)** The fifth type is labelled vindictive. In contrast to the pervasively angry type, the vindictive rapist's anger is focused solely on women. These offenders are not impulsive, nor are they preoccupied by sexual fantasies. The goal of this type of rapist is to demean and degrade the victim.

3. **Groth (1979) proposed a threefold rapist typology. Name and provide two features for each of the types of rapists.**

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 14-2-03

**Page-Reference:** 409-410

**Answer: - Anger rapist:**

\* use of more force than necessary to obtain compliance and engagement in a variety of sexual acts to degrade the victim;

\* high levels of anger directed solely toward women; and

\* need to blame and punish the victim for the sexual assault.

4. List four characteristics of the fixated child molester and four characteristics of the regressed child molester.

Difficulty: Moderate

QuestionID: 14-2-04

Page-Reference: 410

**Answer:** - *Fixated child molester*

- 1) Primary sexual orientation is toward children (i.e., little or no sexual contact with adults);
- 2) Sexual interest in children begins in adolescence and is persistent;
- 3) Male children are primary targets;
- 4) No evidence of precipitating stress;
- 5) Offences are planned;
- 6) Emotionally immature, poor social skills, usually single;
- 7) Typically no history of substance abuse; and
- 8) No distress or remorse over behaviour.

- *Regressed child molester*

- 1) Primary sexual orientation toward adults;
- 2) Sexual interest begins in adulthood and is episodic;
- 3) Female children are primary targets;
- 4) Precipitating stress and feelings of inadequacy;
- 5) Offences are impulsive;
- 6) Often married and experiencing marital problems;
- 7) Offences often related to alcohol use; and
- 8) More likely to report remorse for behaviour.

5. List the four types of female sexual offenders identified by Atkinson (1996). Describe each in terms of their offending behaviour and their backgrounds.

Difficulty: Hard

QuestionID: 14-2-05

Page-Reference: 414

**Answer:** 1) *Teacher/lover*. These offenders initiate sexual abuse of a male adolescent whom they relate to as a peer. The offender is often in a position of authority or power. It is unknown how common this type of female sex offender is because the victim rarely reports the abuse to authorities. This type has not likely experienced childhood sexual abuse.

6. According to Finkelhor's (1984) theory of child molesting, what are the four preconditions in order for sexual abuse to occur?

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

14-2-06

**Page-**

417

**Reference:**

**Answer:** - The offender must be motivated to sexually abuse. Motivation is due to three factors: (1) emotional congruence, which is the offender's desire for the child to satisfy an emotional need, (2) sexual attraction to the child, and (3) blockage of emotional outlets for the offender to meet his sexual and emotional needs.

- The offender must lack internal inhibitions (e.g., due to alcohol use or impulse-control problems).

- The offender must overcome external inhibitors for the abuse to occur (e.g., they must create opportunities to be alone with a child).

- The offender must overcome the child's resistance. Offenders will reward the child with attention or bribes to encourage the child to cooperate. Alternatively, some offenders will use the threat of harm to intimidate the child.

7. Describe the primary method used to assess deviant sexual interests, as well as two approaches used to treat deviant sexual interests.

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

14-2-07

**Page-**

421-422

**Reference:**

**Answer:** One of the most popular methods to assess deviant sexual interests is the use of **penile phallometry**. Penile phallometry involves placing a measurement device around the penis to measure changes in sexual arousal. To measure deviant sexual interests in child molesters, photos of naked male and female children and adults are presented, as well as rapists' recorded descriptions of nondeviant and deviant sexual behaviour.

Many different techniques have been developed to train offenders to eliminate deviant thoughts and interests and to increase the frequency of appropriate sexual thoughts and interests. For example, in **aversion therapy**, the offender is sometimes given an aversive substance to smell (e.g., ammonia) whenever he has a deviant sexual fantasy. The underlying goal is to reduce the attractiveness of these deviant fantasies by pairing them with a negative event.

Another approach is called **masturbatory satiation**. In this treatment, the offender is told to masturbate to ejaculation to a nondeviant fantasy. After ejaculation, he is told to switch to a deviant fantasy, thus pairing the inability to become aroused to this deviant fantasy. The effectiveness of these techniques to change deviant sexual interests has been questioned by several researchers (Quinsey & Earls, 1990).

8. Describe the two main components of relapse prevention programs aimed at sexual offenders. In addition, distinguish between the terms lapse, relapse, and abstinence violation effect in the context of relapse prevention programs.

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

14-2-08

**Page-**

**Reference:**

422-423

**Answer:** - *Components of relapse prevention program:*

- a. Offenders must list emotional and situational risk factors that lead to either fantasizing about sexual abuse or actually committing sexual abuse.
  - b. Offenders must develop a plan to learn appropriate coping and avoidance strategies to deal with potentially high-risk situations.
- *Lapse:* any occurrence of fantasizing about sexual offending or engaging in behaviours that are part of the offence cycle.
  - *Relapse:* occurrence of a sexual offence.
  - *Abstinence violation effect:* way the offender reacts to a lapse.

**Chapter 15: Homicidal  
Offenders**

**Chapter 15 Multiple Choice  
Questions**

1. Which of the following forms of homicide is exempt from penalties according to Canadian criminal law?

manslaughter  
self-defence  
infanticide  
first-degree murder  
second-degree murder

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:**  
15-1-0  
1

**Page-  
Reference:** 428

**Answer:** self-  
defence

2. All of the following have a maximum penalty of life in prison (25 years with no chance of parole) except \_\_\_\_\_.

manslaughter  
first-degree murder  
infanticide  
second-degree murder  
all have a penalty of life in prison.

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:**

15-1-0  
2

**Page-  
Reference:**

428

**Answer:**

infanticide

3. **Carson arrived home from a business trip to find his girlfriend Sonya in bed with his best friend Jake. He flies off the handle, grabs a gun from the closet, and shoots them both. What type of homicide would Carson most likely be guilty of?**

manslaughter  
first-degree murder  
matricide  
second-degree murder  
instrumental homicide

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

15-1-03

**Page-  
Reference:**

428

**Answer:**

manslaughter

4. **In the process of sexually assaulting a woman, Joseph kills her via suffocation. Joseph is most likely be guilty of \_\_\_\_\_.**

manslaughter  
first-degree murder  
sexual homicide  
second-degree murder  
instrumental homicide

**Difficulty:**

Hard

**QuestionID:**

15-1-0  
4

**Page-Reference:** 428

**Answer:** first-degree murder

5. **Within the past decade, homicide rates in countries such as Canada, the United States, and the United Kingdom has:**

- generally increased.
- generally decreased.
- remained totally stable.
- fluctuated dramatically.
- was never measured.

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 15-1-0  
5

**Page-Reference:** 428

**Answer:** generally decreased.

6. **In general, homicide represents approximately \_\_\_\_ % of all crimes in Canada.**

- 27
- 19
- 8
- 4
- 1

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 15-1-0  
6

**Page-Reference:** 428

**Answer:**

7. Despite what many members of the public might think, homicide is actually a relatively rare offence in Canada, representing less than \_\_\_\_\_% of all violent crimes.

- 5
- 10
- 25
- 1
- 0.1

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 15-1-07

**Page-Reference:** 428

**Answer:**  
1

8. Canada's homicide rate has been \_\_\_\_\_ since the early 1990s and is currently at its \_\_\_\_\_ rate since the \_\_\_\_\_.

- increasing, lowest, 1920s
- decreasing, highest, 1990s
- increasing, highest, 1980s
- decreasing, highest, 1940s
- decreasing, lowest, 1960s

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 15-1-08

**Page-Reference:** 428

**Answer:** decreasing, lowest, 1960s

9. In 2014, which province or territory reported the lowest homicide rate in Canada?

Manitoba  
Newfoundland and Labrador  
Ontario  
Yukon Territories  
Alberta

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

15-1-09

**Page-Reference:**

428

**Answer:** Newfoundland and Labrador

10 In 2014, \_\_\_\_ homicides were committed by youth (out of 516).

200  
150  
25  
175  
350

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

15-1-10

**Page-Reference:**

429

**Answer:**  
25

11 What is the difference between instrumental violence and reactive violence?

Instrumental violence is used to achieve an external gain whereas reactive violence is in response to provocation.

Instrumental violence is in response to provocation whereas reactive violence is used to achieve an external gain.

Instrumental violence is unplanned and reactive violence is planned.

Instrumental violence is driven by negative emotions and reactive violence is driven by positive emotions.

Instrumental violence is more likely to be committed by females and reactive violence is more likely to be committed by males.

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

15-1-11

**Page-Reference:**

429

**Answer:** Instrumental violence is used to achieve an external gain whereas reactive violence is in response to provocation.

12 Instrumental aggression is also known as \_\_\_\_\_ aggression, whereas reactive aggression is also known as \_\_\_\_\_ aggression.

affective, predatory  
predatory, affective  
sadistic, passive  
negative, affective  
affective, passive

**Difficulty:**

Easy

**QuestionID:**

15-1-12

**Page-Reference:**

429

**Answer:** predatory, affective

13 In their study on reactive versus instrumental homicides, Woodworth and Porter (2002) found that the highest percentage of homicides in their sample were classified as \_\_\_\_\_.

purely reactive  
reactive-instrumental  
instrumental-reactive  
purely instrumental  
control-oriented

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 15-1-13

**Page-Reference:** 430

**Answer:** purely instrumental

- 14 In their large scale study of homicides in the United States between 1990 and 1994, Miethe and Drass (1999) classified homicides as reactive or instrumental and examined whether victim-offender relationship was related to the type of violence used. Which of the following statements accurately reflects their findings?

Most homicides were instrumental independent of victim-offender relationship.  
Homicides committed by family members or acquaintances were more likely to be reactive relative to stranger homicides.  
Homicides committed by strangers were more likely to be reactive relative to instrumental murders committed by acquaintances.  
Family members are the most likely to commit reactive murders, whereas instrumental murders are most likely committed by acquaintances of the victim.  
Instrumental murders are most commonly associated with family members, relative to homicides committed by either strangers or acquaintances.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 15-1-14

**Page-Reference:** 429-430

**Answer:** Homicides committed by family members or acquaintances were more likely to be reactive relative to stranger homicides.

- 15 The term \_\_\_\_\_ describes the act of a child being killed by their own

uxoricide  
mariticide  
filicide  
femicide  
reactive aggression

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

15-1-15

**Page-Reference:**

430

**Answer:**

filicide

- 16 **Woodworth and Porter (2002) found offenders who scored higher on the PCL-R were more likely to commit \_\_\_\_\_ homicides compared to offenders who scored lower on the PCL-R.**

reactive  
instrumental  
staged  
bizarre  
violent

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

15-1-16

**Page-Reference:**

430

**Answer:**

instrumental

- 17 **Arlene is a young 18-year-old girl who has hidden her pregnancy from her family because she knows they would reject her and her child if they found out. She wants to live and eventually find a husband, but is scared of what others will think of her 'bastard' child. Within a few hours after the birth of her child, she wrapped the newborn in blankets and smothered it until the baby was no longer breathing. What type of homicide has Arlene committed?**

infanticide  
uroxicide  
familicide  
neonaticide  
matricide

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 15-1-1  
7

**Page-  
Reference:** 430

**Answer:**  
neonaticide

18 **What type of mental illness in women is most likely associated with suicidal or homicidal thoughts within the first three months after childbirth?**

post-partum depression  
borderline personality  
schizophrenia  
post-partum psychosis  
bipolar depression

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 15-1-18

**Page-  
Reference:** 432

**Answer:** post-partum  
psychosis

19 **Which of the following types of homicide is almost always committed by a man?**

infanticide  
uroxicide  
familicide  
neonaticide  
androcide

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 15-1-19

**Page-Reference:** 434

**Answer:**  
familicide

- 20 Jared believes that he is going to lose his job, his family will be unable to afford to live their current lifestyle, doesn't see another way out, and doesn't want his family to suffer. After a particularly bad day at work, he goes home, kills his wife and 3 children, and then shoots himself. What type of murderer would Jared most accurately be classified as?

instrumental killer  
despondent non-hostile killer  
reactive killer  
hostile accusatory killer  
goal oriented killer

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 15-1-20

**Page-Reference:** 434

**Answer:** despondent non-hostile killer

- 21 Randy is an aggressive individual who often blames his wife for his own shortcomings. He accuses her repeatedly of cheating on him, but feels stuck in the relationship and wants it to end. One day after work, he comes home and overhears his wife talking on the phone to Bill, their insurance agent. He again accuses her of having an affair with him, and shoots her and then their son so he can have a "fresh start". What type of murderer would Randy most accurately be classified as?

instrumental killer  
despondent non-hostile killer  
reactive killer  
hostile accusatory killer  
goal oriented killer

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 15-1-2  
1

**Page-Reference:** 434

**Answer:** hostile accusatory  
killer

22 Which type of homicide occurs with approximately half of perpetrators committing suicide following the murder?

familicide  
femicide  
mariticide  
uxoricide  
manslaughter

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 15-1-22

**Page-Reference:** 433

**Answer:**  
familicide

23 What is one feature of homicides that is *more* common in homicides committed by youth than those committed by adults?

being acquainted with victim(s)  
being drunk or high  
having an accomplice  
killing a family member  
using reactive violence

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 15-1-23

**Page-Reference:** 434

**Answer:** having an accomplice

24 Which of the following is *not* one of the categories within the typology of juvenile homicide developed by Cornell, Benedek, and Benedek (1987)?

crime  
psychotic  
conflict  
predatory  
all of the above are part of the typology

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 15-1-24

**Page-Reference:** 436

**Answer:** predatory

25 A youth who kills his or her parents would be guilty of what type of homicide?

femicide  
parricide  
uroxicide  
mariticide  
androcide

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 15-1-2  
5

**Page-  
Reference:** 434

**Answer:**  
parricide

26 **The killing of a wife by her husband is referred to as**

\_\_\_\_\_.

mariticide  
neonaticide  
infanticide  
uxoricide  
familicide

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 15-1-2  
6

**Page-  
Reference:** 436

**Answer:**  
uxoricide

27 **Mariticide refers to:**

\_\_\_\_\_.

the killing of men.  
the killing of women.  
the killing of a wife by her  
husband.  
the killing of a husband by  
his wife.  
the killing of a married  
couple.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:**  
15-1-2  
7

**Page-  
Reference:** 436

**Answer:** the killing of a husband by his  
wife.

28 **Sinha (2012) reported that there are two major motivations underlying intimate partner homicides in Canada. What are these motivations?**

rage and dissatisfaction.  
arguments and jealousy.  
delusions and hysteria.  
hopelessness and depression.  
mistrust and disobedience.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:**  
15-1-2  
8

**Page-  
Reference:** 436

**Answer:** arguments and  
jealousy.

29 **Which of the following risk factors were *not* identified by Campbell, Webster, and Kozoil-McLain (2003) in their examination of femicide?**

the offender has access to a gun  
previous threats were made with a weapon  
estrangement  
the victim left the offender for another partner  
the offender suffers from psychopathy

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 15-1-29

**Page-Reference:** 437

**Answer:** the offender suffers from psychopathy

- 30 **Spencer wants to kill his wife. Which of the following is most likely true concerning this type of homicide according to the research discussed in your text?**

He is more likely to beat or strangle her than shoot her.  
He is not likely to kill himself after the homicide.  
He is likely to thoroughly plan the homicide.  
He will not use excessive force as he just wants her dead.  
He is not likely to feel any remorse.

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 15-1-30

**Page-Reference:** 437

**Answer:** He is more likely to beat or strangle her than shoot her.

- 31 **For Beauregard and Martineau's (2013) sample of Canadian serial killers, the average age of the offender in was \_\_\_\_\_ years, the majority of offenders were \_\_\_\_\_, most offenders were \_\_\_\_\_ at the time of the crimes, and the offenders had a \_\_\_\_\_ criminal history.**

40.1, Caucasian, married, similar  
35.5, Asian, married, diverse  
28.4, Caucasian, single, diverse  
19.2, African-Canadian, single, similar  
45.2, African-Canadian, single, diverse

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 15-1-31

**Page-Reference:** 440

**Answer:** 28.4, Caucasian, single, diverse

**32 What is the key difference between mass murder and serial murder?**

Mass murders tend to be committed by teams of offenders whereas serial murders are typically committed by offenders working alone.

Mass murder involves a cooling-off period between offences whereas serial murder does not.

Mass murder involves the killing of at least three people whereas serial murder involves at least six victims.

Mass murder involves the killing of individuals at several locations whereas serial murders tend to occur at the same location.

Mass murder does not involve a cooling-off period between offences whereas serial murder does.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 15-1-32

**Page-Reference:** 442

**Answer:** Mass murder does not involve a cooling-off period between offences whereas serial murder does.

**33 What type of murder generally occurs across a number of different locations but with no cooling off period?**

mass murder  
spree murder  
serial murder  
second-degree murder  
instrumental murder

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 15-1-3  
3

**Page-Reference:** 442

**Answer:** spree  
murder

34 **Concerning the difference between female and male serial murderers, which of the following statements is true?**

Both male and female serial murderers tend to have a history of criminal offences.  
Females are more likely than males to use poison as the method of murder.  
Males are more likely than females to kill for money.  
Females are more geographically mobile than males.  
Males are more likely to kill family members than females.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 15-1-34

**Page-Reference:** 444

**Answer:** Females are more likely than males to use poison as the method of murder.

35 **Concerning the difference between male and female serial murderers, which of the following statements is true?**

Females are more likely to kill family members than males.  
Females often kill to gain sexual gratification or control over their partners.  
Males often kill with an accomplice in about half of the homicides they commit.  
Males are more likely to be territorial and carry out all killings in one location or area.  
Males are more likely to kill for money than females.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 15-1-35

**Page-Reference:** 444

**Answer:** Females are more likely to kill family members than males.

36 Which of the following types of serial murderers is *not* included in the classification system proposed by Holmes and Holmes (1998)?

the hedonistic serial murderer  
the visionary serial murderer  
the sadistic serial murderer  
the power/control serial murderer  
the mission-oriented serial murderer

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 15-1-36

**Page-Reference:** 444-445

**Answer:** the sadistic serial murderer

37 According to Holmes and Holmes (1998), which type of serial murderer is most likely to be diagnosed as delusional or psychotic?

the visionary serial murderer  
the power/control serial murderer  
the comfort serial murderer  
the lust serial murderer  
the thrill serial murderer

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 15-1-3  
7

**Page-Reference:** 445

**Answer:** the visionary serial murderer

38 According to Holmes and Holmes (1998), \_\_\_\_\_ serial murderers is primarily motivated by material or financial gain?

the mission-oriented  
the comfort  
the visionary  
the power/control  
the thrill

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 15-1-38

**Page-Reference:** 445

**Answer:** the comfort

39 According to Holmes and Holmes (1998), the \_\_\_\_\_ serial murderer is primarily motivated by the excitement he derives from seeing his or her victims in terror or pain?

the mission-oriented  
the comfort  
the visionary  
the power/control  
the thrill

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

15-1-39

**Page-Reference:**

445

**Answer:** the  
thrill

- 40 James believes that all prostitutes are scum and taint the world with their "sins". As a result, he desires to eliminate them all, and begins targeting prostitutes as his murder victims. According to the typology proposed by Holmes and Holmes (1998), James is a \_\_\_\_\_ serial murder.

mission-oriented  
comfort  
visionary  
power/control  
thrill

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

15-1-40

**Page-Reference:**

445

**Answer:** mission-  
oriented

- 41 Levi is a serial killer who tortures his victims and desires to make them "his puppets". He wants to be able to dominate their every action and have them 'move' only for him. According to the typology proposed by Holmes and Holmes (1998), what type of serial killer is Levi?

the mission-oriented serial murderer  
the comfort serial murderer  
the visionary serial murderer  
the power/control serial murderer  
the thrill serial murderer

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 15-1-41

**Page-Reference:** 445

**Answer:** the power/control serial murderer

42 Which of the following is not one of the classification categories proposed by Keppel and Walter (1999) to classify sexual murderers?

power-assertive killer  
anger-retaliation killer  
opportunistic-excitation killer  
power-reassurance killer  
anger-excitation killer

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 15-1-42

**Page-Reference:** 445

**Answer:** opportunistic-excitation killer

43 École Polytechnique, Columbine, Virginia Tech, Sandy Hook Elementary, and Dawson College all are examples of what type of murder?

filicide  
serial  
spree  
uroxicide  
mass

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

15-1-43

**Page-Reference:**

446

**Answer:**

mass

44 Which of the following characteristics was *not* identified by Fox and Levin (2012) as a feature of mass murderers?

They are socially isolated and lack interpersonal skills.  
They select targets that represent who they hate or blame for their problems.  
They often feel rejected by others.  
Their crimes often are impulsive and "snap" reactions to perceived insults.  
They are frequently depressed and angry persons.

**Difficulty:**

Hard

**QuestionID:**

15-1-44

**Page-Reference:**

447

**Answer:** Their crimes often are impulsive and "snap" reactions to perceived insults.

45 According to social learning theorists, aggressive behaviour is:

the product of a disturbed personality.  
the product of negative childhood experiences.  
the product of learning.  
the product of childhood physical abuse.  
the product of evolution.

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 15-1-45

**Page-Reference:** 448

**Answer:** the product of learning.

46 **A recent theory of aggression is based on the GAM, a model developed by Anderson and Bushman (2002). GAM refers to the \_\_\_\_\_.**

General Adaptation Model  
Generalized Adaptive Mechanisms  
General Aggression Model  
Global Aggression Matrix  
Gradient Accelerated Mayhem Model

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 15-1-46

**Page-Reference:** 448

**Answer:** General Aggression Model

47 **According to the \_\_\_\_\_, crime and homicide can be thought of as adaptive behaviours that help us to survive to pass on our genes.**

social learning model  
evolutionary theories  
general aggression model  
biosocial model  
life transition model

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 15-1-4  
7

**Page-  
Reference:** 448

**Answer:** evolutionary  
theories

48 **According to social learning theorists, aggression also is influenced by indirect rewards that include all of the following except \_\_\_\_\_.**

mass media  
peer group  
family circle  
observing others  
genetic influences

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 15-1-4  
8

**Page-  
Reference:** 448

**Answer:** genetic  
influences

49 **In a meta-analysis by Jolliffe and Farrington (2007), what type of violent offender treatment program was found to be *least* effective in reducing violent reoffending?**

relapse prevention  
anger management  
social skills  
empathy training  
self-regulation system

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 15-1-49

**Page-Reference:** 450-451

**Answer:** empathy training

50 Which of the following is *not* one of the treatment target areas incorporated into programs offered to violent offenders?

employment and economic planning  
anger management  
social skills  
emotion management  
self-regulation

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 15-1-50

**Page-Reference:** 450

**Answer:** employment and economic planning

## Chapter 15 Short Answer Questions

1. **What are the four main types of homicide recognized by Canadian criminal law? Discuss the features of each, including the definitions and penalties.**

**Difficulty:** Moderate

**QuestionID:** 15-2-01

**Page-Reference:** 428

**Answer:** Canadian criminal law recognizes four different types of homicide: first-degree murder, second-degree murder, manslaughter, and infanticide (the killing of a baby).

*First-degree murder* includes all murder that is planned and deliberate. It also includes the murder of a law enforcement officer or correctional staff member, or a murder occurring during the commission of another violent offence (e.g., sexual assault), regardless of whether the murder was unplanned or deliberate. All murder that is not considered first-degree murder is classified as *second-degree murder*.

*Manslaughter* is unintentional murder that occurs during the "heat of passion" or because of criminal negligence. If a man returns home unexpectedly from a business trip to find his wife in bed with her lover, and during the ensuing altercation he grabs a rifle and shoots and kills the lover, that man could be charged with manslaughter; the crime occurred in the "heat of passion." On the other hand, if a drunk driver accidentally kills an individual who was crossing the street this driver has not committed a crime in the "heat of passion"; instead, the driver could be charged with manslaughter due to criminal negligence.

Different penalties are imposed for each type, with a maximum of 5 years for infanticide and life in prison (25 years with no chance of parole) for the other three.

2. **Distinguish between a reactive and an instrumental homicide.**

**Difficulty:** Easy

**QuestionID:** 15-2-02

**Page-Reference:** 429-430

**Answer:** - *Reactive* (a.k.a. *Affective*): a homicide that is impulsive, unplanned, immediate, driven by negative emotions, and occurring in response to some perceived provocation  
- *Instrumental* (a.k.a. *Predatory*): a homicide that is proactive, premeditated, calculated, motivated by some goal (e.g., to obtain money, power, control, etc.)

3. **Differentiate between filicide, familicide, femicide, and mariticide.**

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 15-2-0  
3

**Page-Reference:** 430-43  
7

**Answer:** - *Filicide* refers to the killing of children by their biological or stepparents.

- *Familicide* refers to the killing of a spouse and children.

- *Femicide* is a general term referring to the killing of women.

- *Mariticide* refers to the killing of a husband by his wife.

4. **Identify the two types of familicide murderers described by Wilson, Daly, and Daniele (1995), and discuss the features of both.**

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:** 15-2-0  
4

**Page-Reference:** 434

**Answer:** Wilson et al. (1995) described two types of familicide murderers: the despondent non-hostile killer and the hostile accusatory killer.

The *despondent non-hostile killer* is depressed and worried about an impending disaster for himself or his family. He kills his family and then commits suicide. Past acts of violence toward children and spouse are not characteristic of this type of killer.

The *hostile accusatory killer*, however, expresses hostility toward his wife, often related to alleged infidelities or her intentions to terminate the relationship. A past history of violent acts is common for this type of killer.

5. **Identify the three categories of juvenile homicide offenders outlined by Cornell, Benedek, and Benedek (1987), and describe the circumstances of their offending. Which type is the most common among youth killers?**

**Difficulty:** Moderate  
**QuestionID:** 15-2-05  
**Page-Reference:** 436

**Answer:** The types of homicide were labelled *psychotic* (youth who had symptoms of severe mental illness at the time of the murder), *conflict* (youth who were engaged in an argument or conflict with the victim when the killing occurred), and *crime* (youth who killed during the commission of another crime, such as robbery or sexual assault).

The crime subgroup was the most common (51%) among youth offenders, with 42% not far behind in the conflict group

6. **Distinguish between serial, mass, and spree murderers. Discuss the key elements that distinguish these types of multiple murderers from one another.**

**Difficulty:** Moderate  
**QuestionID:** 15-2-06  
**Page-Reference:** 442

**Answer:** Murderers tend to be categorized as *serial killers* when they have killed three or more victims, in three or more separate events, at three or more separate locations, with a cooling-off period between the murders (i.e., an inactive time interval between the murders).

*Mass murderers*, on the other hand, kill four or more victims in one event at one location. Given that the murders take place at one time in a single location, a cooling-off period is not relevant.

Finally, for a series of murders to be considered a *spree*, the offender must usually have killed two or more victims in one continuous "event" at two or more locations, with no cooling-off period between the murders.

7. **List four of the six key differences that were identified by Hickey (2006) between female and male serial murderers.**

**Difficulty:** Hard

**QuestionID:**

15-2-0  
7

**Page-  
Reference:**

444

**Answer:** - Males tend to have a prior criminal record, whereas females do not.

- Females are more likely than males to have an accomplice.

- Males are more likely to use a firearm or strangle their victims, whereas females are more likely to use poison.

- Males are more likely to kill for sexual gratification or control, whereas females are more likely to murder for money.

- Males are more likely to kill strangers, whereas females are more likely to kill family members.

- Males are more geographically mobile, whereas females tend to be more place-specific.

8. **Holmes and Holmes (1998) proposed a four-fold classification system of serial murderers, with one being a hedonistic serial murderer. What motivates a hedonistic serial murderer? List the three subtypes of the hedonistic serial murderer and distinguish between them.**

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

15-2-08

**Page-  
Reference:**

444-445

**Answer:** - Hedonistic serial murderers are characterized by self-gratification.

\* *The lust serial murderer:* motivated by sexual gratification and becomes stimulated by the process of killing

\* *The thrill murderer:* motivated by the excitement associated with seeing their victim experience terror or pain

\* *The comfort serial murderer:* motivated by material or financial gain

9. **Holmes and Holmes (1998) proposed a four-fold classification system of serial murderers. Describe the four major types of serial murderers and their motivations.**

**Difficulty:**

Moderate

**QuestionID:**

15-2-09

**Page-  
Reference:**

444-445

**Answer:** (1) **Visionary:** The visionary serial murderer kills in response to voices or visions telling him or her to kill. This type of serial murderer would most likely be diagnosed as delusional or psychotic.  
(2) **Mission-oriented:** The mission-oriented serial murderer believes there is a group of undesirable people who should be eliminated, such as homeless people, sex-trade workers, or a specific minority group.  
(3) **Hedonistic:** Hedonistic serial murderers are motivated by self-gratification  
(4) **Power/Control oriented:** The power/control serial murderer is not motivated by sexual gratification but by wanting to have absolute dominance over the victim.

10 **Describe the General Aggression Model (GAM), including the inputs, the internal states they influence, and behavioural outcomes.**

**Difficulty:** Hard  
**QuestionID:** 15-2-1  
0  
**Page-Reference:** 448-44  
9

**Answer:** The first component is referred to as *inputs*, which refer to biological, environmental, psychological, and social factors that influence aggression in a specific social encounter. Inputs are categorized into person factors (e.g., traits, attitudes, genetic predispositions) and situation factors (e.g., incentives, provocation, frustration).

According to the GAM, inputs influence behaviour via the *internal states* that they create within an individual. Specifically, input variables are thought to influence cognitions (e.g., hostile thoughts), emotions (e.g., anger), and arousal, and these three routes are also thought to influence one another (e.g., hostile thoughts can lead to increases in anger).

These internal states in turn influence *behavioural outcomes* through a variety of appraisal and decision processes. Some of the outcomes reflect relatively automatic, impulsive actions, whereas other actions are heavily controlled and thoughtful in nature. These outcomes influence the social encounter, which has an impact on the inputs in the next social encounter.

See Figure 15.2 in text